

6
THE
HISTORY
OF
Don Fenise.
A NEW
ROMANCE,

Written in Spanish

BY

Francisco De las-Coveras.

And now Englished by
A PERSON OF HONOUR.

L O N D O N,

Printed for *Humphrey Moseley*, and are to
be sold at his shop at the *Prince's Armes* in
St Paul's Church-yard, 1651.

Southwark

To the READER.

WEE shall not need
to throw away
words in commen-
dation of this Hi-
story. Those that
have read it, will save us that la-
bour; and those that never saw it,
if now they censure it, will speake
too late: For, the Book hath alrea-
dy had honourable Test from the
best Judgements in the Court and
Academies of Spaine. If you
thinke them partiall; beleve an
A 3 Enemy

To the Reader.

Enemy (one of the greatest Wits of France) who in a Letter, since printed, writes thus to his friend.
“ Though I have little reason to
“ doate on ought that but tast's of
“ Spaine, which fights against us
“ and in one Summer robb'd me of
“ a Brother and a Nephew: Yet I
“ confesse I am much enamour'd on
“ the Booke you sent me, The History
“ story of DON FENISE: The
“ Plots are so well mannaged; the
“ Passions cleane and naturall; the
“ Language chosen and proper
“ and the whole Discourse so per-
“ fectly well wrought, that I am
“ sorry it was written by an Enemy
“ to

To the Reader.

to our Country. I wish hee that
speakes so excellently of Lovers,
did not hate France. We allow'd
them more Cunning, not more
Wit. But this Author hath the
happinesse of his own Nation &
of ours.

By this time perhaps you
like the Book, but doubt the Trans-
lation. 'Tis now in your power,
and must speak for it selfe. All I
aske (and 'tis no buge Request) that
you would not pronounce upon it
without comparing the Originall:
Otherwise you may do more wrong
to the Translator than be bath
done to the Author.

THE

**The severall Histories contained
in this Booke.**

T <i>He History of Fennie and Laure</i>	pag. 10
<i>The History of Don Lovis</i>	26
<i>The continuation of the History of Laure</i>	35
<i>The continuation of the History of Don Lovis</i>	45
<i>The history of Eufemie and Theodore</i>	60

The Second Booke.

<i>The History of Rufine and Don Jovan</i>	88
<i>The History of the Tragick Loves of Maroel</i>	116
<i>The History of solitary Simeon</i>	128

The Third Book.

<i>The History of Frederick</i>	147
<i>The continuation of the History of Eufemie</i>	161
<i>The History of Don Jame</i>	206

The Fourth Booke.

<i>The History of Don Antonio</i>	250
<i>The history of Don Charles and Violante</i>	295
<i>The history of Don Garcia and Constance</i>	308

E R R A T A.

Pag. 8. *Recker* for *Reck*. p. 16, lin. 31. a *Chirke* for *ib*. l. 32. *Arrey*. p. 40.
l. 17. *could* for *sold*. p. ib. l. 18. *dele when*. p. 36, l. 28. *Splendor*. p. 41. l. 26.
Heride for *Lerrida*. p. 313. l. ult. *shen* for *she*.

THE



THE HISTORIE OF F E N I S E.

The First Booke.

IT was towards the Evening of one of the fairest dayes of the Spring time, when *Pole-ron*, one of the most accomplish'd Shepheards of the Mountaines and Meadowe, neighbours of *Toledo*, was neare unto a Fountaine entertaining his Thoughts; but so sad, that the various beauties of the Plants & Streames could but very little recreate him. A misfortune that had be-
come him kept him in this country place, where expecting that the Destinies might be favourable unto him, he served the Shepheardesse *Jacinte*, whose Renowne did blemish the lustre of the fairest of that Amiable habitation; but his suite was

not pleasing unto her: Shee shewed him nothing but contempt, the assured recompence of those that merit her the least. She was the onely daughter of a Shepheard, and dearely beloved of another, who did possesse much more of the goods of Fortune then did *Polemon*, the which did render her equally vaine and disdainfull towards those that courted her, and who did endeavour by honest wayes to get accessse neare to her. In such manner, that playing too much the discreet, and reserved person, she made her disdain to appeare.

Neverthelesse *Polemon* did not cease to continue the Vowes which he had made to serve her, wherein he went beyond his Rivalls, and wherein he had so good grace, that hee was envied of all those which had the same intentions. This Shepheard walking about the Fountaine, discoursed within himselfe of the extravagancies of Lovers, and the divers effects of that passion, as having a most particular knowledge thereof, when as remembring himselfe of certaine verses that did agree with his opinion, he song them for to recreate and entertaine himselfe with the Echo of those Rocks, expecting that *Jacinte* would passe neere this Fountaine, where she came almost every night, when she might not bee importuned with the heate of the sunne: they were these.

A Complaint against Love.

*Thou wants as much judgement as ey, no odds,
Thou little devill which subdu'st the gods;
For thou bai'st those that love thee, onely those;
And like an insolent Proud Victor
Never is thy rigour stricter,
Then gainst such as submitt to thy dispose.*

In all thy actions Treachery presides,
And th' Army of thy Passions Fury guides,
That gainst the Lawes of prudence will advance,
Thy food is poyson, and no reason
Can thy wild Discourses season,
Thy knowledge is thy beight of Ignorance:

When a poore Lover, that hath worne thy chaines,
Imagines he hath tooke sufficient paines,
And his Remuneration lookes to have ;
Then thy severitie regarding
No high merit, for rewarding
Payes him with torments like a gally slave.

None more then I, feeles how thy sorrow wasteth,
None lesse then I, thy sweetnesse ever tastes,
She scornes me, to whose favours I pretend
I chase, she flyes, what strange misfortune
Crosses me, still to importune
If she resolve never to condescend,

That such sad pressures may finde some reliefe
A little yet to mollifie my griefe
From hope alone, vaine hope, there drops a balme :
I in the aire am building Castles
With the winde my Fancy wrastles
And in a tempest searches for a calme.

Maugre the Demon's pow'r that blinds my sight
And drives into an eternall night,
Yet through the storme my passage I extort.
But las, when I have long been striving
To scape death, and am arriving,
My fate is, to be shipwrackt in the Port.

The Shepheard ending these last verses, remained in so profound a consideration of their subject, and so satisfied with his singing (for there is no Musician that doth not take pleasure to heare himselfe) that after having ended his musick, he was a little time without perceiving the motion of certaine bushes which were neere him, astonished; it may be, to see a man habited after another fashion then those who were accustomed to visit them; in the end hearing this motion, and seeing that there was no storme to cause it, he was a little surpris'd; but his admiration ceased by the presence of a yong Gentleman who came out of the thicket, who coming to him said thus. Shepheard the travells where-with Fortune persecutes me, and the favour that nature hath done you, hath conducted me hither, and although that being brought up amongst these Rocks, it seemes that you ought to retaine their hardnes, neverthelesse this charming voice where-with you animate this Forrest, hath perswaded me that I should finde neere unto you the easments and succours which I search, that heaven having given you the graces of an Angell, you should not be unprovided of the feelings of a man.

Poleron harkened most attentively to this discourse which gave him knowledge of the good wit of him that had held it; for words being the daughters of the understanding doe give witness of her capacitie; and by an answer in the same stile, thanked him for the good opinion that he had conceived of his courtesie, and promised him to serve him in all things he should have need of; if peradventure, said he, your high condition doe not condemn the lownesse of mine.

This

This discreet manner of speaking pleased very well this Gentleman, who answered the Shepheard, that upon the first occasion hee would let him know, the cause which had obliged him to have recourse to him: and after many discourses hee told him as a friend, that it did concerne him greatly to quit those habits too full of lustre, and to disguise himselfe in poore clothes like unto his, to the end that he might not be knowne during the time that he resolved to remaine amongst these mountaines, and also to live more familiarly with the other Shepheards, and not to give them any suspicion.

This resolution seemed very good to *Poleron*; and for to put it in present execution, I will, said hee, goe fetch you the better of two sutes, which I onely weare upon our Village feast dayes; and when you are accommodated, I will say that you are one of my kinsmen, which for my sake hath left his country, to passe his life here with me; so you shall be in all libertie, and suspected of no man.

This Gentleman had scarcely lost the sight of *Poleron*, when he perceived come out of the same place, from whence he was come before, three men well mounted, whereof one had his visage masqued and led by a Peasant; as soone as they did perceive the gentleman, fury did so strongly transport them, that all three drawing their swords fell upon him to massacre him. He did what he could to defend himselfe, and shewed all the courage that could bee imagined, but all in vaine, for the party was not equall.

The discourse which *Poleron* and this Gentle-

man had together, was heard by *Jacinte*, & *Lizeron* her Brother; which were hidden amongst the nearest bushes, who seeing the stranger all alone, and abandoned to the mercy of his Enemies, ran to ayd him; or at least to stay by their presence the evident danger that threatned him; for although they did not know him, yet they did so affect him, having heard him say that he would stay with them, and quit the glory of his condition for to accommodate himself after the simplicity of theirs: but they could not make so great hast to come to him, as the others did to take away his life, so that at the instant that they approached, the stranger fell to the ground, hurt with two great wounds, and had received many others without their Arrivall. The murderers fearing that *Lizeron* and *Jacinte* were followed with many other Shepherds, withdrew themselves into the same place from whence they were come; fearing that if they should stay, the advantage which they had gotten, might be changed into disadvantage.

They surprized *Clitor* the Shepherd which guided them, in demanding of him at their meeting, if he had seen passe that way a Cavalier of the same feature and in the same habits of him that was hurt, and he having answered them, yea, they prayed him to conduct them the same way he had taken, making him believe that this was their Master, and that they had lost him in the next wood.

This Shepherd after having innocently answered to their demands, and seeing that they had almost killed him, ran hastily to informe the Justices of their acts, who sent presently up and downe the Country

Countrey to take the Malefactors. In the interim, *Polemon* ignorant of this Tragedy, returned from his Lodging, bringing with him the habit hee went to fetch; and finding *Jacinte* (who being touched with compassion for the ill fortune of the Gentleman which lay stretched upon the grasse) rubbing his face, and striving to stay the blood of his wounds, he saw also coming *Lizeron* with a vessell full of cold water, wherein *Jacinte* wet her hand; and did convert it into pearle, like a new *Aurora*, bedewing his face therewith; he suddainly came to himselfe, and testified by his looks the astonishment he had to see himself in so different estate from that he thought fortune had reduced him; but because she is of the female Sex, she is subject to inconstancy. He did contemplate and admire together as much as the passion he suffered in his soule, and the paine of his body would permit, the graces and features of *Jacinte*: If the cause of the misfortune which was befallne him had been lesse adorable, he had suffered himselfe to have beene overcome by the charming lookes, and sweet speeches of *Jacinte*. In effect she had in this action so many charmes and graces, that *Polemon* might have been jealous, if the love which he bore her, had not rather been for divertisement then designe, or that his prudence had not knowne that those courtesies which she rendred to this stranger, proceeded only from charity, and not affection.

Polemon approached, to whom *Jacinte's* Brother recounted succinctly what was happened; and after, having bound up his wounds as well as they could, they carried him in their armes unto the

next Village, to be more conveniently looked unto : At the first steps they made, *Clitor* arrived with the Officers of Justice whom he went to fetch, they saw the hurt man, and went on to the pursuit of those that had committed the crime. In the mean time the good shepherds went on their way, and *Jacinte* followed them, with a countenance that witnessed as much compassion and feeling apprehension of the danger of this Gentleman, as *Poleton* had cause to feare the losse of that he did not possesse, nor only hoped. O Love, that thou art a rigorous Tyrant ! That there are extravagancies in thy effects ! Thou wouldest conserve that which thou hast not : Thou fearest to lose that which thou hopest not for : Thou hopest that which thou flyest from : Thou flyest that which thou dost enjoy : They carried the Malade unto *Poletons* house, where they made a bed very carefully, more handsome and soft, then fair and rich.

The night overtook the Officers of Justice in making their search, but they forbore not to visit the Caves and Rocks, chasing the prey, so that amongst the crags of this mountaine they found a horse intangled amongst the shrubs, wherein the reines of his bridle were fastned, and a good way from thence, a young man of a very good countenance, and well clad : when as without asking him what he was, or from whence he came, no, nor hearing his reasons, or giving place to his excuses, put irons upon his hands like a murderer, and carried him to the prison of the Village, which joyned to the house of *Poleton*, leaving him there as to the Inquisition, untill he might accuse him-
selfe

selfe of the crime whereof they presumed him guilty.

The wounded Cavalier felt not so great paine in his body, as inquietude in his mind, seeing himselfe without all meanes to satisfie two violent passions, Love, and Revenge; there came from the next Village a Chirurgion, who had much tongue, but little experience, neverthelesse this cure was happy (rather by the good fortune of the wounded, then by the science of the chirurgion) since that within few dayes he recovered him his health, the which he had never done before to any man. *Poleron* impatient to know who was his guest, after having seene him carefully looked unto, desired him to discover himselfe unto him, to the end he might search occasion to serve him: the Cavalier knowing him, selfe obliged by so many courtesies shewed him, made no great difficultie to reveale unto him his greatest secrets in making him this discourse.

Although I am not ignorant that he is reputed almost ingratefull that acquits himselfe hastily of that which he oweth, for as much as it seemes he is willing to pay to be no longer a debtor, and that there is nothing dearer then that which cost many prayers; so it is deere *Poleron* for to please you, and also having knowne your spirit capable of confidence, I will tell you the history of my misfortunes, to move you to pittie, and also to invite you to assist me: and if one may describe many misfortunes in a little room, I will endeavour to make you a succinct narration thereof.

THE HISTORIE OF FENISE.

THe heavens were pleased to give me birth in *Madrid*, the Court and ordinary abode of the Kings of Spaine, meanely favoured with the goods of Fortune, but amply with those of nature; which consists as you know in noble blood, valour & freedoms of the minde; my young years were imployed in studying humane learning, where I found the vanity of those sweete deceipts wherewith the world flattereth us and destroys us, disposing the pastimes of infancy to serve to the vices of youth: but because those disabuses proceeded from the experience of others, they converted themselves into proper abuses; for seeing that those inconveniences which I read in histories and examples did not happen to me, I did repute them fabulous. My father whose age ought to have served him as the looking glasse of humane miseries, to amend his humane disordered affections; and to prepare himselfe for his approaching death; lived with as little apprehension of the time to come, as if every day had beene the first of his life, and that he should never arrive at the last. For certaine reasons he quitted the Court, and went with all his family to dwell in the Citie of *Toledo*; where lay the greatest part of his estate. My mother was gladd of this change, hoping that my father would change his customes, but it fell out quite contrary to what she expected; since that during the truce which he had made with the vio-

lenc ho

lence of his nature, he quarelled against one of the greatest families of that citie.

Be not astonished deare *Poleon*, if I speake this of him that gave me life: for I am to be pardoned: a father that bringeth up his children as an enemy would doe, doth not merit that they should hide his evill carriges: In a word, I fashioned my selfe after his negligent example, I suffered my selfe to be carryed away with the vanitie of young men, and presumption of those that are rich.

The Cavalier enemy to my father had two sonnes of mine age and a daughter somewhat younger, they were the honour and beauty of the citie, but the daughter particularly a subject where one might equally admire, wit, beauty, lively courtesie, and modestie joyned with vertue, and she was also with these qualities, a prodigious ostentation of the will and powre of Nature. I saw her one day going to the place where duty of religion obliged her; and since that houre (I doe not know if I shall name her unhappy) I have beene so great an admirer of her beauty, that I have not knowne how to conduct my self in the way of my good fortune. By this affection testifie my satisfaction, seeing that it was as impossible, as they say, to know *Laure* without loving her, it seemes difficult to bee beloved of her. This is the name of the faire that causeth my paine, I went and came by the street wherein she lived, as it is the fashion of lovers to doe, and principally in our nation. In fine, I found occasion to appeare unto her, and to let her know my passion, I flattered her spirit with letters in prose and verse, money, that hath no value, but that which is given it by them who receive it.

By

By liberalitie or rather by prodigalitie I gained the women that ſerved her, weake Guardians of the honour of a maide, but the more I ſearched to approach her, the further off I found my ſelf, her reſiſtance increaſed in ſuch manner, that I forced my ſelfe to overcome it. But my love came to ſuch a point of obſtinacy, that it ſeemed that I had rather deſigne to ſurmount her rigours then obtaine the enjoying of her beauty.

My ordinary walks about her houſe ſerved for diſcourſe to the neighbours and ſuſpition to her bretheren. The eldeſt, called *Don Oliban*, having certaine knowledge of my paſſion, made from thence the foundation of a treaſon altogether unworthy of a noble courage or an indifferent wit. Excited either by the love of his honour, or the inveterate hatred that was betwixt our fathers, he ſought by my death to put an end to their enmitie, and to give a beginning to my miſfortunes, one night being gone to the gate of his lodging, with intention to ſpeake to one of the ſervants of *Laure* my confidants, *Oliban* urged by a furious motion of choller, would take away my life, and for to render his enterpriſe leſſe doubtfull, he ſhot me into the body with a piſtoll, and caſt me upon the threshold of the dore; many people came running at this noiſe; *Oliban* fled, and they carryed me to my lodging, where I was carefully looked unto, and with hopes to be cured; becauſe the wound was not deepe, the violence of the ſhott being broken by a ſtrong Buſſe-coate that I then wore.

Wee had at our houſe a *Barbarian* ſlave, a man of valour and good breeding, he hath ſerved my father

ther in perilous occasions, where he hath often prooved his courage and fidelitie; he did particularly affect me, and taught me his language, esteeming in that he gave me all he was able, telling me, that if it was not profitable unto me, at least it would doe me no hurt. In effect it seemed to mee that no body ought to neglect the understanding of any thing, though it seeme but of small consideration, for it often arriveth that one may make use thereof.

This man, seeing the outrage which was done me, resolved with himselfe to intrap my enemy, and in case he could not, my father gave him leave to set the house a fire, to the end to take a greater revenge, I meane in destroying the family: this designe coming to my knowledge, I stayed the effect, as much for the consideration of *Laure*, as for to satisfy my selfe, against him alone that did me the injury. During these inquietudes I received, a plaster so excellent for the curing of my wounds, that it seemed I had not bled enough to pay the value thereof. It was a letter which *Laure* sent me, wherein I learned that pittie, a feeling naturall enough to women, had had more force over her, then my diligences and wakings, and that a favour which my paine and travells could not obtaine in a long time, her compassion had bestowed upon me in the space of an houre: If my memory be good, the letter contained this discourse,

THE

THE LETTER OF LAVRE TO FENISE.

I Shall from henceforth esteeme my selfe indebted to *Oliban*, If you recover your health as I wish you may, since that his cruelty hath rendered me sensible of pittie, and the wounds which he hath given you have pierced my heart. Before this accident I might have vaunted my selfe invulnerable, but at this present, I am not onely subject to wounds, but also to feele those of others; If modestie did not retaine me, I would say that your indispositions are common to me, and that I am afflicted with all your apprehensions.

The end of this letter was the beginning of my hopes, and the birth of a more happy life. From that time my health increased dayly, I was able in a short time to continue my former exercises; very hardly can one quit those habitudes that custom hath naturallized. I had the honour during some few nights to speake with *Laure*; but on the other side I did what I could to meet her brother, the hatred I bore him parallell'd the love I bore her. I was told he was retired into *Saint Peters*, where upon I writ, to him that he wronged himselfe to make use of a sanctuary against justice, and since that he searched to assure himselfe he had no better refuge then his valour, whereof I would make proofe, and for that effect I desired to see him in the field, the night following, to defend himselfe from the name of Traytor which I had given him every where as he deserved

Laure

Laure knew my designe, for possessing my heart as shee did, it was easie for her to know my intentions; and he that I had chosen to carry my challenge had told her thereof to the prejudice of mine honour and secrecie: she prayed him not to deliver it, untill she had provided a remedy, and without losing time she sent all over to seeke me, to the end to dissuade me, knowing well that I would obey all her commands. But I who feared the power she had over my affections, and desired to revenge my selfe by the favour of the obscuritie of the night, to save my selfe the more easily from the hands of Justice: I shunned those to whom she had given this commission, the which caused her to undertake a strange enterprise, as little judicious as promptly executed.

She determined to put her selfe into mans apparel, and to meeete me where I assigned her brother. Alas *Poleron*, I then attended a person animated with choler and not with love; I pretended a vengeance, but upon another subject, I hoped a satisfaction, but not so unhappy. The night was so obscure that there was not a star to be seene; mine also denied me her light: it is true that that which is contrary to us, both never shine when we may receive any contentment thereby: Oh a thousand times infortunate! I was so blinde that a small glimmering of light was denied me, for feare I should see the fault I was going to commit, being then the first in the place assigned, and seeing the appearance of a man to approach me, I did not doubt but this was the enemy attended, I advanced towards him with my sword in my hand, and to speake truth, I would have rendered

dered him the like surpris he had made me, and not give him time to prepare himselfe, in such manner that I gave a stocado in the breast of this poore Lover, which overturned her to the earth, in crying, Ah / cruell thou hast slaine me ! at this sorrowfull accent: I was immoveable, all my senses failed me; Ah Madame is it you said I, in bowing downe indeavouring to know her as well by the face as voice. Alas *Fenise*, said she, thou revengest thy selfe severely, since thou takest away the life of a person that loves thee more then her selfe, for to triumph more gloriously over thy enemies; these words pierced me more then a thousand stabbs could have done me, despaire did so violently possesse me, that I presented two or three times my swords point to my breast, but I know not whether a christian consideration, or desire to search remedy for her witheld me, I fell downe upon my knees before her, mine eyes full of teares embracing her and striving to animate her vigour. O my Queene, what ill fortune hath brought you hither? what fury hath guided my hand to commit this criminall action? saying thus, I strived to stay her blood, deere *Fenise*; said she, I thinke my selfe happier thus to dye, then by the hands of my enemies, my brothers, this will be a just repairing of the injury they have done thee for my sake; but without losing time, let us see if there be any meanes to get from hence, to search some remedy for our evils, I am satisfied with thy apprehensions; harke thee, I will tell thee what is to bee done; she would have continued; but a swoond stayed her speech. Imagine *Poleron* in what estate I then found my selfe; represent unto
your

your selfe, a rich Merchant in a tempest upon the Sea beaten wth contrary windes, one while ready to cast all his riches into the water to save his own life, then staying himselfe to lament the inestimable losse he was about to make; hoping a calme in the midst of the tempest, so was I agitated in the storme of a thousand divers thoughts. If I should leave her, thinking she was dead, I was hindred therefrom for feare to lose her, if she was not: If I stayed by her, I must dye with a thousand sorrowes, and endanger my selfe to bee taken by Justice. I knew not what to doe, nor what to thinke, sometimes I thought I felt her dye and respire, but, alasse, this was a pure imagination caused by the force of my desires: In fine, I ranne to the next house, where by the help of some money which I gave, I tooke wine, and a man along with mee, to helpe mee to assist her; I put a drop of that liquor in her mouth, which awakened her heart, and sighing demanded where she was. Courage my friend, said I, not daring to speak to her as a woman, in the presence of this peasant, you shall bee presently at your owne house; saying so, this man and I tooke her up, and carryed her to the house of a Cavalier, my intimate friend, called *Don Johan de Valazquez*: This was not without much paine and apprehension of being met by the Justices, who made their walk at that houre.

This Cavalier had a Sister, who in charitie took an extreame care of *Laure*, whilst I went to seek a Chirurgeon, to whom I payed as much for his secrecy as cure, as I had done to him that helped

me to carry her. The Chirurgeon having taken away a handkerchief, which I had put in her wound to stay the blood, did carefully dresse it, but he could not yet give us any hope of her recovery.

Behold *Poleon*, how rudely Fortune used mee; she was not onely content to deprive me of all sorts of goods, but also of all my hopes thereof.

In the interim, the absence of *Laure* being perceived, all her Fathers house was in an uproare; but the brute passed not the doores, as well because the honour of a family is in danger of Shipwrack, when it is tossed by the windes of popular mouthes, as also to make way the better to the revenge her Brothers hoped to take, thinking by this silence to take away all apprehension to their enemy.

They incontinently perswaded themselves, that there was none in the towne capable of the Ravishment of *Laure* but my selfe; for they knew well that I served her, and that she had some inclination to mee; so that they were resolved to pull out my heart, and seek me even to the center of the Earth, if I should be there.

This project was not so secretly kept but it came to the knowledge of one of their servants whom I had obliged with divers presents, who came to give me advice thereof: At her first seeing me, she demanded where *Laure* was, and I being afraid of a double intelligence (from those that are for them will give most) counterfeited to be astonished, feigning to know nothing of her absence; shee who was discreet enough, pressed me no further; Well, well, sayd she, in what place soever she is, doe not often frequent

frequent her, for her brothers have espies to trappe you both together, and take away your lives at the same time. If you bee wise get away from this place, otherwise you are in danger to be slaine; doe not neglect my counsell. I desiring to conserve my selfe, more for the consideration of *Laure* than mine own, went to *Cigarales*, which are the chiefeest Farmes belonging to the Citizens of *Toledo*, and lived in the house of a Farmer, who before had served in my fathers house. I much desired to hear newes from *Laure*, and to let her hear from me, but I durst not confide in any one. And although I had no great cause to be in paine for her, having left her in such hands, yet I could not continue long time where I was, being ignorant in what estate she was. A heart that wants that which it desireth, is in perpetuall inquietude: I knew not whether I was dead or alive, so that to know certainly the estate of my life, it was necessary that I should search after newes of that of *Laure*. I went disguised to *Toledo*, where I was scarcely arrived, when I perceived the younger brother of *Oliban*, who saw me, and followed me, doubting it was I; I made many turns one way, and another, to try if he looked after me; but seeing that in truth he had discovered me, I was constrained to leave the town, onely passing before the house of *Don Jonen*, the keeper of the treasure of my felicity; not very well satisfied, seeing all the doores shut up, fearing that some evill had befallne *Laure*. I was not gone farre from *Toledo*, when turning my selfe, I perceived three men riding full gallop after mee: I imagined that these

men had a designe upon me, therefore I went into the next thicke wood to hide my selfe from them, being behind a very thicke tuft, I saw them passe by me, very much troubled having lost the sight of me, they looked here and there doubting what to doe. And because I was not in too secure a place, I went amongst the rockes, knowing it rather desperate-nesse then valour to attend their comming; where perceiving my selfe amongst so many precipices and not knowing which way to avoid them, I lighted & and left my horse at hazard, I had wandred amongst the rockes almost two houres searching the refuge of some shepherds cabin; when I so happily found you neere the fountaine where I was caught by mine enemies, whilest you went to fetch me habits to disguise my selfe.

Fenise thus could his history to *Poleron*, when when the Judge of the towne assisted by the Pregnotory and serjeants came into the house; hee had beene told that *Fenise* was arrived in that towne in other cloathes and that he was some spy disguised: addressing himselfe to him, with an action fierce and barbarous told him, that he was the Kings prisoner. *Fenise* astonished at these words, asked him the cause; the house said the Judge, (thinking he had demanded the house whither he would carry him prisoner) continuing to speake upon this conceipt: you are pleasant said he to enquire of the house, whither I will carry you; you shall go whither I please: I here represent the King, obey away, to prison. He was so cholerique and spake so fast, that his words stumbled one upon another, the made so much hast to get out of his mouth; if *Fenise*

was astonished at his arrivall, he was now altogether confused; but using prudence, he endeavoured to moderate the too violent motion of this rustique magistrate, he told him he did not aske for the house whither he would have him, but the reason of his imprisonment, the which instead of appeasing him provoked him the more, in such manner that he went to have layd hold of this infortunate Cavalier, if the Pregnotory had not told him that he ought not to proceede with so much incivility against a gentleman; the Judge being thereupon freshly angered, fell to cuffs with the Pregnotory untill the blood came from both their noses.

This little tragedy-comedy did not at all please *Fenise* for having beene acted upon his occasion, he feared to pay the charges thereof by some rude usage. *Poleron* being of the same opinion, counselled *Fenise* to suffer this brute to doe what he would, assuring him to take him presently out of his power, he confiding in this suffered himselfe to be taken prisoner.

They put him in the same prison where the young man was, that the judge had taken the same day that *Fenise* was hurt, and who had suffered him to lye there without questioning him, expecting a fitt occasion to send him to *Toledo*, knowing himselfe not capable enough to forme a processe of so high a nature. By the light of a lampe they chained *Fenise* as a criminall of state, to the other end of the beame whereunto the first was tyed, who was very glad to have a companion to entertaine himselfe with. Whilst they were tying *Fenise* the other attentively regarded him, thinking that hee

knew him, and when they were alone without light, he disguising his voice demanded of our Cavalier the cause of his imprisonment, my misfortune is the onely cause, answered *Fenise*; for I doe not believe that I have deserved this punishment, by the tone of his voice the first prisoner confirmed himselfe in the opinion that he had that he knew *Fenise*; yet he was so amazed with this strange encounter, that being night he thought he dreamed: when an unfortunate person receives any contentment hee thinks it an illusion. *Fenise* had also the curiositie to enquire the misfortunes of his companion, who answered him alwayes in a disguised voice. You and I are of different opinions, you say your ill fortune hath brought you hither, & I that my good fortune hath conducted me, and rendred my captivity a thousand times more deare to me then libertie. I never heard any but you, said *Fenise*, say, that paines were pleasant, libertie troublesome, & imprisonment delightfull; yet I esteeme my selfe happy, answered the unknowne, in regard I finde two sorts of contentment, the one reall, and the other in appearance, and although the latter be not, he that presumes it so, doth not desire it lesse then the first: so that I finde my prison lovely, my chaines favour, and my paines delightfull: I am of the nature of those that love their captivity. The pearle conserves and nourisheth it selfe in a prison of a shell, the diamond formes it selfe in congealed dew, the gold ingenders and augments by the Sunbeames in the Entrails of the Earth, and the soule which is the most perfect of all creatures next unto the angels, doth so well please it selfe in the prison

son of humane bodies, that she cannot quit them without great trouble, the same cause have I to love my condition. Love makes me finde delight in torments, felicitie in misfortunes, and pleasure amongst these paynes. He, answered *Fenise*, hath no great experience of the effects of love, that taketh his afflictions for contentments. Alas love, the world would be at quiet, if it could avoid thy reaches, and warrant it selfe from thy deceipts.

For my part I, have a thousand times proved, that all the evils that our miserie hath cast upon us in nature, are found in him; and without going about to tell them in particular, I demand what tumult is there in the World, which he causeth not? What sedition, which he stirreth not up? Noyse, which he makes not? What feare, which proceeds not from him? He is the most cruell Enemy of men: He betrayeth them under flattering appearances: He makes them swallow poyson deliciously prepared: in embracing them, he kills them: In brief, he is of such a nature, that there are none but those that know him not, that esteem him; therefore I wish that he may possesse the soule of him that is cause of my misfortunes; it is the most rigorous vengeance that I can desire.

Fenise said this with so much vehemency, that he thereby testified the passion which moved him, and the force of his apprehensions; whereupon his companion answered; without doubt, you loue in such a place where your affections are little regarded, since that you speak so ill of him who hath been the cause of all the good that the Earth now possesseth, that the World admireth,
C 4 and

and that Nature adoreth. Love is the originall of our life: He provides us nourishment; without him the Earth would not bring forth those favoury fruits which serve us for food, and without him men would have no communication together: He peopleth Cities: He governeth Common-wealths: He is the Spring of Peace and Joy: His effects are Force, greatnesse of Courage, Liberality, and Courtesie: He is the Father of boldnesse and Generosity: And I could give you examples of all that I have told you in my proper person, if I did not feare more to weary you by giving eare unto them, then to tire my selfe by relating them. In conclusion, I maintain that there is nothing without love; yea, that he is among contrary Elements.

I doe not deny, answered *Fenise*, that Love hath all these properties, but as no man is bound to say more then he knoweth of him, I that have found in his Garden nothing but thornes and brambles; I tell you what I have seen, what I have experimented, and what I have learned of himselfe. I doe avouch that of all humane contentments there is none like the pleasures of a Lover, who is beloved with a reciprocall Affection; but this happinesse endureth so little, that the happiest Lover can scarcely vaunt himselfe to be arrived at the beginning of his pleasure, but at the same instant he loseth it.

Fenise and the unknowne Prisoner passed the rest of the night in this pleasant contestation, the one considering the miserable estate wherunto fortune had reduced him, not being able to
have

have newes from *Laure* ; the other satisfied with the favours of his destiny, desiring alwayes to alledge the affliction of his companion ; but seeing that opportunity was not yet offered, he determined to have patience, and not to make himselfe known, but to very good purpose.

As soon as it was day, *Poleton* went to visit his Friend, to confirme him in the assurance which he had given him to deliver him from the hands of that insolent and ignorant Judge. *Fenise* thanked him for the care that he had of him, and told him that he was happy in his misfortunes, to be a prisoner with a man of so excellent a wit, whose pleasant conversation had much diminished his sorrowes. *Poleton* turned himselfe for to behold him, but the Prisoner having seen him enter, had turned his back against the light, and lay halfe along upon the beam, feigning to be asleep, as well not to be in view, as for to hearken if amongst their discourses he might finde any thing that might concerne him. The two Friends believing that sleep had seized him, begun to discourse together, and amongst the discourses which they held, *Fenise* did observe so many judicious reasons in *Poleton*, that he found them to exceed the wit of a Shepherd, as already he had seen other testimonies thereof. Desiring then to content his curiosity, he made him this discourse. I might believe (dear *Poleton*) that you did not love me with a good heart, if you should refuse to give me the clearing of an opinion, which I have conceived, and which doth trouble me. Your Countenance, your Courage, your Actions, and your Discourses, agreeth so little with
the

the birth of a Shepherd, that I have imagined divers times, either that you are not descended of the Line of these country Shepherds, or that Heaven and Nature have taken a most particular care to forme your Body and Wit, to render you worthy of a higher fortune then that of this habitation

Truly (answered *Poleron*) I should be very ingrate, if I should not give you the satisfaction you desire: And for to avoyd this shamefull reproach, I had rather in discovering my secrets to you, hazard my selfe to be accounted light, then to be thought to undervalue the amity which you have testified unto me in concealing them: And letting go a sigh that seemed to come from the center of his heart, he said.

THE HISTORIE OF DON LOUIS.

NEere to the River of *Tage*, Nature gave me for Father and Mother two high Rocks, I may well call them so, since the two persons that brought me into the World, having denied me paternall kindneses, these Rocks received me amiably into their laps, where, as by miracle, heaven was willing to save my life, although I might almost wish not to have been obliged to it for so many favours, knowing well that I might have been exempt from many pains which I have suffered; it was not only content to do me this grace, but it yet permitted, that *Timante*, a shepherd of this

this towne should wander into a grove to finde me, and should lose himselfe to get me in him a new father, and he in me an adoptive and obedient son. Hee tooke me from the unpitifull hardnesse of these rockes where I was abandoned, carried me away in his armes, and gave me to a peasant who gave me the first nourishment of infancy. By little and little I grew up amongst the other children of the towne, making appeare daily the markes of a noble extraction, for although this rustique education hath rendered my behaviour rude and grosse, yet it hath not taken from me the feeling of honour and generositie.

In the flower of my youth, fearefull death came to knock at the doore of *Timante*; and he, receiving his advertisments with humilitie, prepared the jewell of his soule, for a more pretious inchasement; he gave me by his will the best part of his goods, and having taken those spirituall refections, which the Church giveth to those *Pilgrims* who finish the passage of the tempestuous Sea of this world, and come to the straites of Death, he rendred his last sigh. But before he came to that extremity, he called me privately to him, and told me that which I have told you, of my birth, and gave me at the same time a little purse, wherein were certaine papers which he said he had found with me, and told me my name was *Don Louis*, and that I was of another linage, then I thought my selfe to be.

This narration did so elevate my courage, that I resolved to search some other occupation then those of a village, so that within a short time after the de-
cease

ceſe of *Timante*, I ſold his goods, ſome ſlocks of ſheepe, and ſome lands of inheritance which he had left me, and left my village life, and country, to travell into forraine nations.

Having ſeene many townes in *Spaine*, clothed like a cavalier of the court, I arrived at *Barcelon*, with deſigne to paſſe into *Italy*, and from thence into *Flanders*, to exerciſe my ſelfe in warlike affairs; but this propoſition was vaine, for a beauty which I ſaw in the towne of *Barcelone* hindred all my projects, and made it impoſſible for me to paſſe further. If I determined to ſee faire *Italy*, and begun to thinke of this maid, I found her ſo faire that I beleevved there was nothing beyond her; here was my *Hercules* pillars: on the other ſide, if my courage reanimated the deſire I had to ſeeke *Laurells* in the hazards of the warres of *Flanders*, I found neere her ſo many *Mirtles*, *Palmes*, and glorious victories to be obtained, in remaining overcome by her charmes, that I might have beene thought to have wanted judgment, if I had neglected thoſe delitious conqueſts.

As ſoone as this adorable object appeared before mine eyes, reſpect ſeiſed me, which in mine opinion, is one of the graces that renders a lover moſt commendable, but not to give occaſion to the common people to talke, I thought it beſt to uſe the diligence of a ſervant, to goe after this beauty and follow her coach unto the place where ſhe dwelt, to the end I might endeavour to get acceſſe there: but either the impertinence of my ſervant or my proper miſfortune made him loſe the ſight of it, and preſently tooke from me all poſſibilitie of offering

ing her my service. Rare loves had never happy beginnings, it was also necessary, that mine which had a strange issue as you shall see, should have a difficult entry. The negligence of an houre cost me almost three monthes (for love alwayes delights to give heavy punishments for light faults) so during this long space it was impossible for me to have knowledge of the cause of my inquietudes. This made me resolve to take againe my first intentions, and seeke my fortune in divers Countries, since that she is not alwayes to be found in the place of a mans birth. The night before my departure I went to suppe with a gentleman one of my friends, for to take leave of him, from whom I departed very late: in passing by one of the best streetes, I found my selfe neere unto five or six men, who without saying a word set upon two who came innocently the same way with me: they seeing themselves surprised, put themselves into a posture of defence, and I considering the inequalitye of the combatants, ranged my selfe with my sword in my hand on the weaker side: but after a few blowes of one side and the other, one of the defendants was hurt and fell to the ground; at the same time those that had wounded him, retired themselves, & the companion of him that was hurt pursued them; I stayed there to assist the wounded, and speaking to him I knew him to be an old gentleman of qualitie, I helped him up and conducted him to his lodging; by the way he gave me a thousand thanks for my assistance, and at every step asked me what was become of *Filendre*: which made me beleieve that that was the name of him who was run after the enemyes. I not knowing

ing what to answer him, told him to comfort him, that he was gone to fetch a Chirurgion: thereupon we arrived at his house, those of his family knowing that he was hurt, were all frightened; and amongst others, a young Lady, whom the griefe of this accident had put into great confusion. I regarded curiously her gestures and actions, and knew her by the light of a torch to be the very same that had caused my torments; then a respectfull feare seized my heart, and I felt certain pricking griefes in my breast, as if the wound which she had first given me with her eyes was opened again. O Beauty, that thou art so powerfull! so to astonish those hearts which the most perilous hazards cannot affright. All the domestiques lamented the disaster that had befallen their Master, whilst I was ravished in the admiration of the features of this Lady, when there came in a young man who had his countenance full of alteration, and his spirit animated with choller, approached her, and gave her two boxes upon the eare, and at the same instant withered the roses and lilies of her cheeks. I being offended with this barbarous insolence, and rashness, that he had to use her so unworthily in my presence, I went to him with my sword in my hand, rebuking his brutality with offensive words: He, who knew me not, drew also his sword, and fighting one with another, I warded his blowes, and gave him two upon the body, which he could not avoid: then in despite of what they could all doe to stay me, I saved my selfe, and went out of the house without being known to any one,
yet

yet having a great desire to know the day following the names of these persons, and the occasion of these strange accidents.

Don Louis, whom we call *Poleton*, was upon the passage of his history, when *Clitor*, and the Judge of the Towne entred into the prison; the first, to see if the unknowne prisoner was of those that did hurt *Fenise*; and the other protesting that he knew very well what belonged to his Office. They were all in suspence to see what would be the issue of these words; but their attention was turned into affliction, knowing that his designe was to send them to *Toledo*. *Fenise* had an apprehension thereof, the unknown prisoner trembled for feare, and *Don Louis* doubted the execution thereof: Seeing the danger wherein *Fenise* would be, returning into the hands of his enemies, he endeavoured by prayers and fair words to divert the intention of the Judge: and although that *Clitor* affirmed that the unknowne prisoner was none of those that had hurt *Fenise*, he changed not the resolution which he had made; all the grace that they could obtaine, was, that the prisoners should be removed from the dark place where they were, into a chamber, but bound to two posts.

When they were come into the light, *Fenise* faced his companion, and saw in him the original of his disgraces, he saw himselfe neare to *Leure*, when he thought himselfe to be far from her: He was almost without motion and sense, so much had joy transported him; but without justifying the excessse of his joy, he contented himselfe

selfe to speak to her with the mute language of his eyes, which often expresse the feelings of the heart more intelligibly then the tongue can doe. *Laure* of her side, made such signes with her eyes, as rendred faithfull proofs of the constancy of her love.

Don Louis, who perceived all these amorous actions, seeing that they were alone in this chamber, having had licence of the Judge to visit his friend, prayed them to explicate the *Ænigmas* of their gestures. *Fenise* spoke, and told him; Deare friend, only in telling you the name of this person, shewing *Laure*, I answer to all the demands you can now make me, you having heard me so often speak it. This is *Laure*, that incomparable beauty which hath charmed my soule: her presence hath surprized me with so excessive joy, that if it was not moderated with the sorrow that I have, to see her suffer so many evils for my sake, it would take away my life. Then turning himselfe towards *Laure*; Ah deare object of my happinesse, is it possible that my destiny may be appeased? Is it true that it is you? my imagination perpetually occupied with your image, doth she not deceive me? What, amongst so many torments can I enjoy so extream a felicity? Without lying I have good cause to complain of your rigour, that hath hindred me so long time the enjoying thereof, in disguising this night the delicious organ of your voice. Speak to me dear *Mistresse*, let me see that my glory is not a dream; tell me what marvellous adventure hath reduced you to this misery, which produceth me so great
good

good fortune. *Laure*, who might rather be called *Aurora*, letting fall liquid pearls upon the very million roses of her cheeks, answered him. My dear *Fenise*, I have striven much with my self to use the dissimulation whereof you complain, and & hinder my self from letting you know what company you had in your prison: I wanted but a little of declaring my selfe when I saw you brought thither; but honour, which you know is so delicate a thing, obliged me to this severe retention; so that your love being guided by respect and civility, you have rather cause to be satisfied with me, then blame me. You cannot doubt of my passion, since that for to give you most particular assurances thereof, I have violated paternall respect, and also that which I owe to my person, in giving occasion to speak to the prejudice of my vertue. But if our destiny have made us miraculously to meet againe, it seems it is but to run the same fortune, and make us hope for a more free conveniency to entertaine our selves, with the fortunes that have arrived us since our separation, the which obligeth me to pray you to give me leave to remitt untill another time the satisfaction of your just curiositie.

Don Louis, who heard these discourses, was so lively touched with compassion, besides the inclination which he had to serve *Fenise*, that he vowed from this moment to hazard all that he esteemed, as well of his goods, as person, to deliver them from the tyranny of this barbarous Judge: And in the opinion which he had to come to the end of his design, he endeavoured to com-

fort *Laure*, giving her hope that she should see her self presently at liberty with her Lover.

This comfortable friend having left them in this expectation, and being gone to put his project in execution, the impertinent Judge came to tell them he had changed his resolution, and that it was not necessary to carry them both to *Toledo*; that for the love of *Poleon* he would leave *Fenise*, and only take the other. At this advertisement, *Laure* felt her heart gnawed cruelly, and revenging her misfortunes upon her selfe, let fall teares from her eyes which were able to have softened Marble. *Fenise* on his side repented himselfe for having so easily believed *Don Louis*, and for suffering himselfe to be taken prisoner; he could not resist the apprehensions of his passion, nor *Laure* overcome the vehemency of her love; so that when she saw her selfe untied from this post, she approached her Lover, and without being scene of those who were to carry her, she fell vpon his neck for to embrace him: By good fortune a swoond seized her at the instant, which stayed the effect of the Judges proposition. Having perceived this swoond, they took all care possible to remedy it, but not with so much diligence, but that the rest of the day passed, which forced them to attend untill the morrow for to carry her to *Toledo*, judging that it was better to deferre it, then to hazard in the night the losse of a prisoner which might be taken from them in the dark.

Fenise beheld this image of death, whose sorrowes he felt in his heart, nevertheless he was presently

presently glad, seeing that the Officers of the Judge deferred their departure untill the next morning, because he hoped some succour from Don Luis that night. Laura being returned from her swoond, they put on her irons, and chained her as before, and Fenise seeing himselfe alone with her, prayed her to acquit her selfe of the promise which she had made him, if sleep, or her indisposition did not hinder her, and to tell him by what happy and strange accident she was come into this prison. She who could not close her eyes, and who felt no incommodity neer the object of her contentment, served her selfe of this favourable occasion, and made him this discourse.

THE CONTINUANCE OF THE HISTORT OF LAVRE.

Since that you left me in the house of your friend Don Ivan de Velasquez, hurt with your sword, but more with your love; and that this Cavalier obliged by your prayers, had taken care for the curing the exterior wounds of my breast; I imagined with my selfe that you had abandoned mee, to make your vengeance more rigorous, in offending my line as well in honour as in blood: having given this foundation to my wrath, I againe encouraged my hopes, & represented to my selfe, that you would never be so barbarous, as to leave me in so miserable a condition, but my imagination propounded alwayes to her selfe, rather evill then good,

and I was disquieted with a thousand troublesome thoughts, making me incontinently change my opinion; sometimes I uttered injurious words against the subject I adored; I accused you of ingratitude, perfidiousnesse, & inconstancy, then upon the suddaine I tooke your part, and sought reasons to excuse you, because I wished you innocent, as well for your honour as my proper interest. And for as much as the outrages which I spoke against you, proceeded from the excesse of my passion, when my imagination had rendered you some ill office, and obliged mee to mingle some cold with my flames, I perceived immediately, that this was with designe to render them afterwards much more violent. These were the ordinary entertaines wherewith I diverted my selfe during mine abode with this Cavalier, except when *Leonor* his sister kept me company; for her wit was so excellent that she gave me no time to thinke of any other thing, but of her sweete discourse. But exactly to instruct you of all that passed in this house whilest I was there, I must tell you a tragique history, whereof it was the *Theatre*.

A young man called *Felix*, a Merchants sonne of *Toledo*, but of very good fashion, possessing many of those qualities which are requisite to a gentleman, became inflamed with the love of *Leonor*: Nevertheless the inequality of their conditions, the reclus life which shee led, the splendor of her beauty, the gravitie of her presence, hindered *Felix* from daring to discover his passion; He suffered long time inquietudes very violent, in the end not being able to resist his torments, he resolved to have recourse

to the intermission of a third person, to interpret his thoughts, not having courage enough to explicate them to her that had made him conceive them. He used a very ordinary way, which was to apply himselfe to the Chambermaide of this Lady, because those kinde of people are enemies that fight close, they strike almost alwaies where they please, and render the victory lesse doubtfull : They evermore finde occasions to praise the pretendant, and to present him to the person sought after. *Leonor* had with her a witty wench called *Amarante*, which *Felix* knew to be able enough to render him good offices. He gave her presents to incite her to favour his intentions : Liberalitie is the first vertue wherewith a Lover ought to be qualified. He declared unto her his passion, and the time when he begunne to feele it, the torment which he suffered, the qualities wherewith Nature had adorned him, the advantages of the hopes of his fortune, being the onely Sonne of a very rich Father ; because these things are more freely spoken to those who are imployed in such businesses, then to the persons sought after, who without doubt might have cause to esteeme them impertinencies and presumptions.

Amarante being very often entertained by this Gallant, had designes upon him, and determined to keep for her selfe, that which hee desired by her organs to offer to *Leonor* ; shee received his messages, and gave him answers according to her minde. She entertained the unfortunate *Felix* with words, and hopes, false as from her Mistresse, but true of her owne part : Making him beleeve, that if *Leonor* did not render him more certaine proofes of her

affection, hee ought to attribute it either to her feare of her Brother, or to her proper modesty: Whilst *Felix* thus persevered in his pretensions, and *Leonor* was ignorant thereof, *Amarante* invented wayes to enjoy her lascivious affections. *Felix* spoke to her at a window almost every night, attributing the care and vigilance she tooke to content him, to proceed from the presents he daily gave her. Alasse deare *Fenise*, I dare not blame the love of *Amarante*, for feare that by others I shew my selfe culpable; I know one ought not accuse the faults of Love, because this passion blindes the judgement, and leaves but little place for reason, to consider the inconveniences it breedeth, and to foresee how to avoyd them, but I doe not approve of the unjust dealing of this damosell.

Don Jovan was much troubled to have a man walke nightly about his house, but hee spoke not of it; from whence I presume his paine was but moderate; for in such displeasures it is almost impossible for the most excellent prudence in the world, and the most stayed spirit to keepe it secret. One night desiring to cleare his doubts, it befell him as to those who are commonly too curious to know what they would be ignorant of. Hee hid himselfe in his neighbours porch, and saw a figure given by the unknowne man, and at the same instant *Amarante* appeared at the window, who told him that her Mistress could not come forth that night, but that the night following he should speake to her, and see her in her chamber. *Felix* having received these sweet assurances, went his way very content with the hopes that he had to receive a recompence
in

in so short a time, which he could not hope for in many yeares. *Don Jouan* having heard what his confident had told him, seeing that the term of the returne of this Lover was not long, since that he was to come againe the night following, would not trouble himselfe to follow him. He resolved to be patient, and dissemble what he thought, neverthelesse in the morning he took *Amarante* aside, questioned her concerning the discourse which she had with the unknowne, who, without enduring many threatnings, made an invention as extravagant as one blinded with love and ignorance could produce. She told him that *Leonor* loved a Cavalier called *Don Antonio*, who you may well know (saide she) by his high birth, and that the night following, he was to come into the chamber of his Sister by her intermission, and the consentment of *Leonor*; she used this stratagem, thinking it would serve her to come to the end of her intentions, imagining that when *Felix* should enter that she should put him into her bed, and when *Don Jouan* should finde him there, he would constraine him to marry her, by that meanes she should quit *Leonor* of the infamy she had laid upon her, and that her artifice would passe for gallantry.

The words which *Don Jouan* had heard the night before, and those he now heard, had so much conformity, that he had no great difficulty to believe what she said, she having confessed her selfe the mediatrix of their loves, he made her also promise to assist him to surprize *Don Antonio* when he should be with his Sister, to the end to oblige him to some convenient satisfaction.

In the interim, *Felix* impatient to possesse the glory he hoped for, passed the day with great inquietudes, so also did *Don Iouan*, but for different ends; the one imagining how to come to the recompence of his paines, and the other how to hinder him. The night being come, *Don Iouan* hid himselfe, and the poore girl thinking that she had subtilly contrived her project, came to the window to attend the arrivall of the abused *Felix*. *Leonor* was come that night to lye with me in my chamber, as she often did, which gave more way to *Amarante*, to abuse the innocent *Felix*, whom she hoped to make enter into the bed of *Leonor*.

When he was come, she opened him softly a window, into which he mounted by the help of a Ladder of cords, from thence she carried him into her Mistresses chamber, and there left him without light, telling him he might have patience whilst she fetched her Mistresse, speaking very softly for feare her voice should make her known; She took *Felix* by the hand and put him in estate to come to the point of his desires. *Don Iouan*, who lay in wait, believed when *Amarante* came againe, that it was her Sister gave her leave to assure her selfe of her Lover, but presently entred the chamber, and without informing himselfe of any thing, gave either of them a stab in the breast, so that the unfortunate *Amarante*, thinking to finde her Marriage-bed, found her Tombe. The blow which *Felix* had, was not in so mortall a place but that he had force enough to recover his armes, and obliged *Don Iouan* to doe the like

like to defend himselfe, but in this violent agitation, the miserable *Felix* advanced to his end, and tumbled dead in striving to get away.

At the same time *Don Iouan* came into my chamber, I am not very certaine with what intention, but I am willing to believe that it was to warrant me from the danger I might be in, if the justices should enter and know me: being entred and seeing his sister with me; he stayd, confused and without speaking a word, returned to see who the dead persons were. He knew *Felix* and *Amarante*, different persons from those whom he thought he had killed; he was extreamely amazed as well for the error wherein he found himselfe, as for the slaughter of this young man, being the onely sonne of a very rich Merchant; who was able to imploy much money to punish him that should be found authors of this crime. Perplexed with the horror of this murder, and feare of Justice, he absented himselfe before day, after having told us the mournfull act he had committed. And I being habited as you see with the same clothes wherein I came from my fathers, when I came to meete you in stead of my brother; I became guid to *Leonor*, as if I had beene some valiant cavalier, and accompanied her to the house of one of her cosens with whome she was to goe to *Heride* a towne in *Catalogne* where one of her Vncles dwelt; because she was resolved to stay no longer with *Don Iouan*, not being able to forget the cruelty which he had thought to have executed upon her person.

See the misfortune that arrived in this great family, by the impertinent art of a domestique of little

the experience which makes me say, that it is fit, that the servants of an honorable house should be vertuous as well as their mistresses, otherwise they are capable to corrupt the daughters or mothers whom they serve, and bring them to tragique ends with the losse of their honour and generall infamy of their familie. I tooke leave of *Leonor* at the dore of the house, where I left her, and immediately by the favour of the obscuritie I came by these mountaines and valleys, searching some village where I might in this disguisement hide my selfe from the knowledge of my brothers, and attend untill it pleased heaven to moderate the rigours of my destiny: The little knowledge which I had of the country, which is full of bushes, hilles, and precipices, was the reason I lost my selfe, and that the Justices of the village light upon me; who led me so happily to this prison, where without thinking thereof, I found that which to me is the most delightful in this world.

Fenise lifted up his eyes and shoulders, astonished with this strange accident, neverthelesse he had taken great pleasure in the harmony of the words of *Laure*. And also to satisfie her on his parte, he told her all which was befallne him untill their common good fortune had brought them together. This discourse ended, they began to reason upon the actions of *Don Iouan* who after the murder of *Felix* and *Amarante* came unto the chamber of *Laure*, judging that he had some designe against the respect he ought to his friend, and integritie of *Laure*, his mistress.

The halfe of this night was almost spent in these entertaines. In the interim, *Don Louis* slept not but laboured for their deliverance as they presently saw the

the effect thereof. Wee told you before that this prisoner joyned upon the house of the sayned *Poleron*, but you must know that there was but a thin wall betwixt them two, made of joysts and bricks; so that it was easy enough for him to execute his designe; so that when he thought them to be in their first sleepe who guarded the prisoners, he broke this wall without noise, with a crow of Iron made a hole big enough, went into the chamber, and with other Iron instruments, broke the lockes which held *Laure* and *Fenise* chained to the post, and delivered them from this rigorous captivitie.

Being gone out of this infamous place he exhorted *Laure* to shew her selfe couragious in this occasion, then they mounted every one upon a good horse, & *Don Louis* served them for guide; they tooke the way to *Toledo* thinking that they would not search after them that way; having testified to apprehend very much their going thither, as the swoond of *Laure* had shewed. Before *Aurora* had given place to the sunne, they found themselves neere the towne; They determined not to enter therein, for feare of some inconvenience, but to goe on to the farmes which are thereabouts, which are called *Cigarrules*, the same farmers house, whither we have already told you, *Fenise* had before retired himselfe; this was accordingly executed; and the day following *Don Louis* went to visit *Fenise* his father on the behalfe of the sonne, and to receive his commands, but not to acquaint him that he was with *Laure*, as they had agreed together. For the hatred which *Feronie*, (so was the name of this cavalier) bore to her Familie was so violent, that he would have abandoned

abandoned his sonne, if he should have known thereof. He received this Embassador with great joy, and without making him stay too long, he made one of his servants take a horse, and gave him good store of money, and commanded him to follow *Don Louis* and to give the money and the horse to his sonne, with a letter whereby he ordayned him to goe to *Valence*, and to stay there untill he heard further commands from him.

Fenise was well satisfied with the returne of his friende, having received by his meanes news of his Fathers health, and witnessses of his affection. Hee tooke the horse and treasure, and for many considerations, hee sent back presently his Fathers servant, because when a secret is known to many, it is hard to keepe it; immediately after they all three tooke horse and went towards *Valence*. *Don Louis* was then habited like a Cavalier, having clothed himselfe at *Toledo*, before hee went to *Ferronte*.

They went so merrily, that some mischiefe was to bee feared; for it succeeds ordinarily after great contentment. Without doubt the Philosopher had experienced this, who desired sorrow, and feared joy: Because, said hee, after Melancholy a man may hope for Mirth, but after Mirth hee can have nothing but vexation. The affection of *Fenise* and *Laure* increased every minute by the mutuall pleasure which they received in their conversation, whereby they grew more acquainted the one with the other; *Don Louis* tooke an incomparable pleasure in hearing their discourses, and seeing their pretty behaviours, wherein *Fenise* inviolably kept
all

all the respect that could bee desired; he acted nothing but with honour and respect. They had not above one dayes journey to *Valence*, when *Laure* prayed *Don Louis* to finish his History which he had begunne, and he being extreamely obliging, begun where he was interrupted by the rustique Judge, and thus continued.

THE CONTINUANCE OF THE HISTORY OF DON LOUIS.

YOU may remember the pitifull estate of this noble Family, amongst so many disasters; Therefore without repeating that discourse, I will onely tell you, that being happily gotten out of the house, without being known, my Love made me stay six whole dayes in *Barcelone*, where I learnt that the old hurt man was father of the beauty which had so lively touched me; a Gentleman of a great extraction, and very rich; that hee recovered by little and little; but he who I chastised for his insolence was dead, and that he was brother to this Lady called *Hipolite*, most wise and vertuous.

All these considerations and high qualities made me judge, that I set upon a place too hard to bee taken, but my love was come to such a point, that it was impossible for me not to adore that divine object. I would not informe my selfe more exactly, for feare of giving suspition to my prejudice. I must be contented to goe and come before her lodging,

to endeavour to get a view of her, although I knew her sight would but augment my pain.

All my diligence and care was inuite, she led so reclude a life, that I could not see her otherwise, but with the eyes of mine imagination; there was no other remedy for my torments, but to wish death, or to banish this celestial Image from my memory, but all these desires and propositions had no effect; I could neither dye nor forget her. In the end, as love findes out inventions as well as necessity, it came into my fancy to make acquaintance with one of the domestiques, and to oblige him by liberalitie, to procure me some aleagement. There was in the house a young man who was Steward, and sometimes served for Usher, whose name was *Oslave*, I prevailed so much with my promises and gifts, that I got his acquaintance and affection, and by this meanes an accessse free enough into the house, without fearing the murmur of the neighbours, who hold their peace at good things, though they know them to be so, but publish that which is ill, though they but doubt thereof. I saw often the faire cause of my inquietudes, but could not finde an occasion favourable to speake to her. Seeing me often frequent *Oslave*, and perceiving that I regarded her too attentively to be without designe, shee tooke notice of my behaviour and actions, and since gave me some signes of hope: From thence I took the boldnesse to declare unto her my passion, by the secreet language of a Letter, which I made her receive. At the first she shewed her self very angry with my audacioussesse; neverthelesse I did not forbear to send her a second, which was more happy than the

the first, since that shee had the curiosity to see it, and boldnesse to make mee an answer: The discourse thereof was very succinct, but yet ample enough to make me hope a glorious successe.

I seeing my selfe thus favoured, was incouraged to goe on, perswading my selfe that a Lady that acknowledgeth her selfe engaged, would not be long in acquitting her selfe thereof. *Olave* being interested in my contentments, tooke often occasion to speake well of me in the presence of *Hipolite*, and at such houres, when she could best give care thereunto, so that by little and little she became more sensible of the power of Love. One day she faigned her selfe extreamely melancholique, which obliged her Father, who loved her dearly, to take her into the country to recreate her spirits, by the change of aire. *Olave* gave mee notice of this designe, and told me the day when, and place whither they went, which was to a village that belonged to them. I disposed my selfe to follow the light of mine eies, and the felicitie of my life, which had a happy issue, for the libertie which they take in that country to walke, sometimes neare a Fountaine, sometimes near a Meadow, Wood, or Garden, gave me opportunity often to come neare her, and endeavour to make her accept my services.

Not long after her arrivall, the Townsmen made certaine games after their manner, where I appeared like a stranger, and gave occasion to *Hipolite* to judge of my dexteritie in those exercises, so that since that time she hath shewne her selfe not so indifferent as before, and upon a convenient and favourable occasion she permitted me to speake to her. I cannot
repre

represent unto you the ravishment of this charming conversation; for there is nothing in the world so sweet as beginning of Love. But as after pleasures discontentments succeed, this felicitie lasted not long: The day following they must return to *Barcelone*.

About a League from the Towne, *Leoncio*, Father of *Hipolite*, her selfe, and the whole Family were invested by a Troope of men armed with Carabines, who came to affront *Leoncio*. He had an old quarrell against a great Cavalier, who had watched him to satisfie his hatred. The Father of *Hipolite* who defyed his enemy, kept himielfe upon his guard, being alwaies accompanied with his Kinsmen and Friends, as well as his adversary; though not in so great number, yet more valiant. The contrary Troope seeing themselves the more, sent three of their men to the Coach of *Hipolite* to seise upon her person, whilst the rest set upon and pressed *Leoncio*, who had left his Daughter to assist his party.

Most insolently they made this young Lady to quit her Coach, and set her upon a Hackney, and carryed her away as the most glorious Trophee they could take from their enemies. By ill fortune I was not neare her at this time, I stayed behinde, devising with *Ottave* of mine amorous adventures; but as we drew towards the Towne, wee saw coming the object of my contentment, in the hands of her enemies. Oh God! cryed *Ottave*, there is some great misfortune arrived; see the Kinsmen of the enemy of *Leoncio*, who carry away *Hipolite*, let us returne behinde these bushes, and get before them; we
did

did accordingly, and put our ſelves in ambuſh in a certaine paſſage, where whiſt we attended them, *Oſave* told me the cauſe of the quarrell; when they came to paſſe by us, we ran upon them with our ſwords in our hands, crying to me, to me companions, they are here, feigning that we were a greater number, wherewith they were ſo frightened, that they left their conqueſt, and fled, except one which ſtayed upon the place, to pay with his bloud and life, for the insolence which he and his companions had committed. After this action wee went to *Hipolite*, whom we found half dead, as well with the feare which ſhe had of her enemies, as that which we had cauſed her, for ſhe knew not that this was *Oſave*, and my ſelf, which had delivered her from her raviſhers.

She was raviſhed with joy to ſee us, but yet this gladneſſe was mingled with diſpleaſure: ſhe perceived a hurt which I had received upon the head, without feeling it, by reaſon of my action. In the interim *Leoncio* aſſiſted by the valour of his friends had on the other ſide given the chace to his enemies, and being all come together againe, *Oſave* recited to him our good fortune; thereupon *Leoncio*, thinking himſelfe, obliged to me, would needs have me taken care of in his houſe, to the end to have more occaſion to ſerve me. I made him many complements, yet nevertheleſſe I ſhould haue been very ſorry to have refuſed ſo advantageous a gratification, ſince by that meanes I ſhould have occaſion to ſee more commodiouſly *Hipolite*: But to my diſgrace my hurt was too ſoone healed, and as pleasures of this World dure but a ſhort time,

so was I in civility forced to leave the abode of my affections, and entertaine my desires as I did before.

Not long after, I was told that there was a Cavalier of *Barcelone*, called *Don Vincence d'Aualois*, of eminent qualitie, a handsome man, of a commendable wit, and rich condition, who sought after *Hipolite*, with designe to marry her. He had not yet let her know of his affections, but having acquainted her parents therewith, he took liberty to publish them, so farre as to compose verses upon the same subject, to give her musick, which was as troublesome to me, as pleasing to others: As one time amongst others I thought to enjoy the deare entertaine of *Hipolite*, she having appointed me a certain houre to see her by a window, where of the iron bars had been often witnessses of the favors she had done me: As I approached to this place, followed by *Octave*, we heard many instruments tuning, which obliged us to stay: it was *Don Vincence*, who testified his esteeme of an Ebony Ring which *Hipolite* had worne, and which he had got by craft from one of her servants, having given her a gold chain in exchange.

This Consort was so melodious, that another would have been charmed therewith; but jealousy, which beat me, rendred this harmony so troublesome, that I wanted not much of making an uproare in the street, audaciously enterprising to trouble their mirth, and chase the Muses from thence. The prudent advice of *Octave* moderated mine anger, he counsell'd me to attend untill *Don Vincence* had made his serenade, and after he was retired, I

might

might approach to *Hipolite's* Window. I governed my selfe by his advice, which succeeded happily: *Hipolite* let me know by her discourses, that although she had heard the musick, she did not believe it was for her, but for another Lady her neighbour, the which contented me much. In our discourses I represented unto her that I had served her foure years, and that this constancy merited the performance of the promises she had made me. Thereupon she answered, that Ingratitude never had commerce with her, and that she was alwayes disposed to give me those satisfactions I could hope from my services, that I was to finde an invention to get into the house, and keep my self in *Octaves* chamber, which being done, she would take care for the rest. As she gave me these instructions, we heard some people in the street, which obliged me to take leave of her, and to retire my self with all the contentment that could be presumed from so glorious hopes.

I left her, and went to search *Octave*, in turning at the corner of the street, I perceived that those who had made the brute which separated *Hipolite* and me, followed me; I doubled my paces for fear of being known, so that I lost them. But having too much pleasure in the conversation of *Hipolite*, I had let passe the houre that I had appointed to meet *Octave* at a Rendezvous that I had assigned him, so that I found him not there, which drave me almost into despaire, seeing that I lost the most favourable occasion that *Hipolite* could ever present me. And for to oppresse me with griefe, when I saw *Octave* the next morning, he told me the great

Complaint that she made of my negligence, and that this was such an occasion as it might be I should not meet with in my whole life: That for his part he could not assist me no more in such occasions, because *Leoncio* had commanded him to go to certaine lands of his, to make a receiver give an account; that it was not permitted him to defer his departure; that I must be silent, and suffer untill his returne, having none but him that could manage my good fortune.

He was a moneth absent, during which time it was impossible for me to see *Hipolite*, not for want of diligence, or care, but of occasion. In the interim *Don Vincense*, whose love increased, pressed the father of *Hipolite* to resolve upon the proposition which he had made him. *Leoncio* seeing a match so advantageous for his daughter, and the equality of their conditions, after having communicated it to his kindred and friends, promised the Cavalier what he desired, without demanding the consent of her that had the most interest therein, thinking it unnecessary to a daughter, humble and obedient as *Hipolite* was, for he did believe that her consent would always depend upon his. Oh the great errors of Fathers, to think that a vertuous daughter ought to be deprived of her choise and will! In fine, *Leoncio* told her no more of this affaire, but that he had married her: She was greatly surprised with so short an oration, and obliging her Father to expresse himselfe a little more amply, he told her the person, admonished her to dispose her selfe to this new change of condition, as also to put on her best ornaments, and to look
cheer-

cheerfully, for, said he, contentment is the most excellent paint wherewith a woman can beautifie her selfe. Having thus perswaded her, he left her; but in stead of preparing her selfe for joy, she abandoned her selfe to sighs and teares.

At that time I went often to her house, as well for to seek some favourable moment to speake to her, as for to learne if *Octave* was returned from his voyage. The last time that I was there, I saw at the doore many Lacquees in the same Livery; this expence testified that they appertained to a Master of great condition: I was astonished with this novelty, and entring for to know the cause thereof, I found *Octave*, who was newly arrived, who (in stead of approaching me with joy) looked so sadly upon me, that he gave me cause to suspect that there was something to be done to my prejudice; I saluted him in embracing him, and asked him the explication of what I had seen; but without daring to regard me, he answered, that being my most affectionate servant, he desired to be excused from interpreting things so troublesome. The longer he deferred to satisfie me, the more I pressed him, in the end my importunity drew from him these words, goe above into the Hall, said he, and you shall see the subject of my affliction. The generall joy of those who were invited, wherewith the place was almost filled, gave me occasion to enter without being noted. I saw *Hipolite* in the middle of a circle of Ladies, shining like a Sun: on another side *Don Vincence*, my competitor, with a countenance that testified his contentment. Finding things in this order, I was

confirmed in the opinion which I had conceived. I put my selfe in a place where I might be seen of *Hipolite*, to the end she might make an end to destroy me, which had arrived without doubt, if I had not been so infortunate, that when I search torments, they flye me. She lifted up her eyes, and seeing me, it was impossible for her to retaine her teares, which she hid the most discreetly she could; thereupon he arrived who was to administer to them the Sacrament, and joyne their hands and wills; but when as they came to entreat *Hipolite* to approach, she begun to talk so extravagantly, that all the company was affrighted. She blamed her Father, offended her Kindred, spoke injurious against *Vincence*. O extreame puissance of an amorous passion, capable to alienate the spirit of the wisest! In a word, she became sencelesse, to the great confusion of all the company, and principally of the Gentleman that pretended to marry her: she named and called me every moment, sayd that I was he, for whom heaven had ordained her, and that I ought onely to possesse her. I found my selfe much troubled amongst these strange confusions, and fearing some danger, slipt behinde a piece of hangings, by which meanes I got out of the house, without being perceived. When she had lost the sight of me, she begun to run about the Hall to seek me, but not finding me, so violent a griefe seised her, that she fell in a trance. They carryed her to a bed, where after a little time, she came to her self again, but with a burning feaver. Al the company departed very Melancolique, and also *Don-Vincence* full of despise and despaire, and *Don-Leonc* suffered himselfe to bee surprised with

with so great vexation, that hee dyed within foure dayes, leaving to her Brother the care of *Hipolite*, and the Administration of his Goods.

See the unfortunate successes of my Loves, whose image will be perpetually engraven in my heart, see how my hopes were converted into smoake, which may serve for an example to consider the inconstancy of humane felicity. After this I retired my selfe into that country place where I had the honour to beginne my acquaintance with you, thinking that I might there live quietly the rest of my life, since I have been established in that course of life; *Octave* writ to me that *Hipolite* continued in the same estate that I had left her in; but I am not in the same condition I was then, my Flames are doubly encreased, they augment every moment, seeing how much I owe to her faith and constancy, so that I now love more madly than ever; neither absence nor time can deface it from my memory. During the time of my abode in that village, I courted a Shepherdesse honoured amongst all the mountaines of *Toledo*, but it was but for to entertain my spirit (although she be perfect, I did but imagine that I treated with *Hipolite*.) So I passed my time when you arrived there deare *Fenise*, and when I was so happy to finde an occasion to serve you, which I shall take pleasure in all my life.

Don Louis thus ending the History of his Loves, they were within a League of the towne of *Valence*, but it was very late, which obliged them to make haste, for feare of being benighted. But they had scarcely begunne this last League, when they heard amongst the Orange trees which grew by the way

side, whercof that passage was full, a plaintife voice, the which with violent sighing seemed to desire to render the aire sensible of his sorrow; they stayed to heare the words which he spoke, afterwards they came neare him, and saw a man stretched upon the earth, in appearance near the end of his life; at this object generous and charitable *Fenise* lighted, tyed his horse to a tree, and demanded of this miserable one the cause of his plaints. *Don Louis* and *Laure* did the like, and accompanied *Fenise*, when this infortunate spoke these words; Cavalier, whatsoever you are, I am so neare mine end, that what diligence soever you can take to succour me, will but little profit me; it must be a force more than humane which must reduce me from the pain I am in; yet neverthelesse I will take courage: Saying so, he endeavoured to rise, and *Louis* and *Fenise* assisted him. When he saw himself up, and supported by these two Cavaliers, he cryed out louder than before, and therupon came two men who fell upon *Fenise* and *Don Louis*, who being assisted with him who counterfeited the dying man, bound and tyed them to two truncks of trees, at the same time they went to *Laure*, who was half dead with feare, seised upon her, and one of the three having known her, said to the others, Courage my friends, I have found what I searched for; then taking the horse upon the which the head of the Troope was come, they set *Laure* upon him, tied her, and made her ride before them. Thus they abandoned the two prisoners to the mercy of their fortune, without taking either Armes or Horses, to let them know, that they who had ravished *Laure* from them, were persons

persons that scorned so poore a booty.

It would be more presumption then eloquence, to goe about to describe the feelings of *Fenise* and *Laure*, seeing themselves so cruelly separated the one from the other. A spirit weaker then that of *Fenise*, would have beene dejected with so sensible displeasures; seeing him selfe tyed and deprived of all meanes to recover his deere *Laure*, who was carryed away like a prisoner. She on the other side fell into teares and sighes which were able to have given apprehensions of pittie, to any thing which is not entirely deprived thereof; she employed all her force to unty her selfe, to the end to be revenged upon her selfe, so far had despaire transported her. The silence and imagination of the reader must supply the defaults of the discourse for the pen cannot lively enough represent an adventure so deplorable. *Don Louis* almost forgot his proper displeasures, to take part of the griefes of *Fenise*, yet without comforting of him, for as much as consolation cannot be admitted in violent afflictions, and it is a great secret to let passe the first violences. These Cavaliers had suffered this misery almost halfe an houre: when *Don Louis* by violent moving and tormenting him selfe had slackned his cords, and not long after found meanes to lose himselfe. *Fenise* used the like diligence, but he could not arrive to his end so soone as *Don Louis*, who was strong, and who knew how to adde industry to force, having set himselfe at liberty he also delivered *Fenise*, they mounted upon their horses, ride after the ravishers of *Laure*, resolved to dye or to overcome, and to take from them this glorious conquest. But they had not ridden far; when

when they were met by two horsemen, who they did believe fled, or pursued after some that fled from them, they were confirmed in this opinion, hearing one of them hastily utter these words: see the traitors, kill them, kill them, *Marcell* since we have reason of our side it is requisite that their blood repaire their treachery. *Don Louis* and *Fenise* were much astonished at this language, and for to warrant themselves from inconvenience they lighted, and put themselves in a posture of defence. The others seeing them thus resolved, imagined them to be those they looked for, then being carryed away with the excessse of their passion, and more blinded with choller then the darknes of the night, begun to set upon them with a great deale of rashnesse, in regard they were advantagiouly armed. And in effect, if heaven the protector of innocents had not had care of *Fenise* and *Louis*, they would have beene in danger to have beene sacrificed to the anger of these unknowne. It happened that there was a little rundle betwixt them which stayed the course of *Marcell*: and as he came to passe it, he fell into a puddle, from whence he was long before he could retire himselfe. His companion, called *Leonard*, found a happier passage; but which had like to have beene that of his death, for he found himselfe betwixt two enemies, and without the good armes wherewith he was covered, he had presently seene his rashnesse payd with his blood; in the interim, *Marcell* got out of the bog, and came to his defence. *Don Louis* seeing him come, left *Fenise* before *Leonard*, and went before him, crying hither, hither inconsiderate, to me, to me, heaven will serve it selfe with my arme to chastise

chastise thy insolence; at the sound of these words *Marcell* knew that his companion and himselfe were deceived, and that they fought not against those they sought for: he retired himselfe and cryed to *Leonard* who was fighting with *Fenise*, that he should make truce advertising him of the fault which his inconsideration had made him commit, in falling upon men they had nothing to demand of. At the instant *Leonard* ceased to presse his adversary, who was already very weary and hurt, and lighting left his armes & went to succour him; the hurt of *Fenise* was upon his right side, but it was given him in gliding, which was the cause that it entred not much into his body and in a place which was not mortall. They demanded pardon one of an other, and those who did before endeavour to take away one anothers lives, used then all diligence to conserve them. For this effect they tooke the way to *Valence*, the habitation of the one, and the infortunate end of the others journey. *Leonard* extreemely afflicted with the hurt of *Fenise*, did not cease to make him complements and excuses, and to testifie to him the extreame sorrow which he had for what was happened, he conjured *Fenise* to take his lodging, to the end he might endeavour by the services which he hoped to render him during the time of his indisposition, to merit the honour of his affection. *Fenise* used the same courtesie of his side; told him that he deemed his blood well imployed since that it had got him the acquaintance of so generous a Cavalier, to whose valour he had designe to have recourse upon all occasions that should present themselves: they thus entertained themselves by the way, when *Don Louis*

Louis said to *Leonard* and *Marcell*, that if they were willing to give them more certaine proofes of their freedome they would not reject the prayer which they made to them, to recite the cause of the great precipitation wherewith they set upon them, without knowing to whom they addrest themselves, because *Fenise* would take delight in this recitall; if it be true that there is consolation in the company of those that are touched with the same afflictions that we are. *Leonard* then spake as being the most qualified. I would freely tell you, answered he, the cause of the too blamable rashnes which I have committed, if this relation might not be received as a testimony of the honour which I beare you, hoping that greater occasions shall be presented wherein I may manifest it, but the feare I have to trouble this hurt Cavalier doth oblige me to excuse my selfe from satisfying your curiositie.

Then *Fenise* added his prayers to those of *Louis*, and at the same instant *Leonard* made them this discourse.

LEONARDS HISTORY OF EUFEMIE & TEODORE.

THe towne of *Valence* whither we are going, is the place of my birth, and ancient dwelling of my Ancestours: If I be not of the greatest families, at the least I am of the most noble, with the successions which my father and mother left me, leaving this world to goe to a better life, they charged me with the care and guard of two Sisters, who
had

had the reputation to bee of the number of the fairest, not onely of the towne, but of the Province, as they grew up, my cares augmented; and in truth it is a dangerous charge to guard a fair Maid: I had an eie perpetually to conserve their honours, because besides my fraternal obligation, mine was therein engaged. I was alwaies putting them in minde of the vertues of the illustrious Ladies of our linage, to induce them to imitate the puritie of their lives. The eldest was called *Eufemie*, and if I be not a partiall Judge, I may say that her graces and beauty were incomparable. Seeing her fit for marriage, there passed not many dayes before I desired her to resolve thereupon; and to excite her thereunto, I represented unto her, that the beauty of a Maide, was a flowre exposed to the desires of a thousand Gallants, who would endeavour to staine the puritie thereof. She was so easily perswaded by my reasons, and rendered her will so conformable to mine, that I sometimes doubted if wee had two soules. I propounded unto her parties which I thought most convenient for her condition, for to dispose her selfe thereunto according to her liking, for a maide ought never to be constrained, she should be free in that election. After that she had maturely considered thereof in her particular, shee made choice of a Cavalier called *Don Alonso de Ulloa*, whose Merits and Qualities were correspondent to hers.

At that time, when I treated of these affaires, liberty of youth, which makes almost all young men commit extravagancies, carryed me in the day to the conversation of my friends, and in the night to those

those Academies where they cut away the renowne of the most honest men, where they ravish the goods of others, and where many vices are learned. I alwayes lost my money, when I set downe to play, it is true, that there is not much difference betwixt playing and losing, since that to expresse that a man hath lost his estate, we ordinarily say, that he hath played it. One night a Gentleman, with whom I played, quarrell'd with me, almost without cause; from words we came to a challenge, and being agreed upon the place where we were to fight, we met there almost at the same instant, Fortune was more favourable to me than to my adversary; I doe not say that I had more valour; for he that hath a heart to measure his sword with anothers, ought to be esteemed as valiant, although he hath the worse. The combat was so advantagious to me, that I tamed the pride of mine enemy, and made him kisse the same place he had already bedewed with his blood.

This Cavalier had a brother, which had a design to affront me, to ravish from me the glory I had gotten, to the confusion of his Kinsman, who seeing he could not execute his vengeance upon me, he invented the most infamous and cowardly one that is possible to be conceived by the most infamous of men. He resolved to make love to my Sister, to defame her honour and ruine mine; a new and cruell method to kill a man. He found occasions enough to execute this mischievous project; he tooke the time of my absence in a voyage which I must needs make to the Court; so that not being able to continue the necessary watch to guard the Citadell,
this

this traytor most industriously made himselfe master thereof. *Eufemye* rendered her self at his discretion; but let us excuse this fault, which might be caused by her youth, liberty, beauty, delights, solitude, amorous discourfes, inflamed letters, services, witness of deceitfull sinceritie, the perswasions of others, her proper passions, or those who have heretofore experimented those things, tell me, what resistance can a maide make that is set upon so many ways? *Don Pedro*; so was this perfidious called, did not content himself with taking from her that which was most pretious, but stole her away from my lodging, and being furnished with things necessary, carried her to *Madrid*, where being arrived, he told her he had no intention to entertaine her there. But Gentlemen, be not astonished, if in telling you the rest, I hide my face for shame. He provided her a house proper to receive visits, it is the fashion to speak thus of such kinde of people to disguise their infamy: I take the boldnesse to speak thus freely hoping in the consequence of this discourse, you will see that I am not guiltie of these enormous delights, and that you shall by and by know the diligence that I have taken to deface them from my gentilitie. In a word, *Eufemy*, who might now more properly be called infamy, became one of the most famous Curtizans; the most courted, and the least reserved: Oh prodigious change of life! what astonishment was it to those, who had before seen her in her retained course of life, and then abandoned to all sorts of liberty, to those who had praised her honesty, and now considered her so disordered, to those, I say, who had
seen

seene her make scruple to be regarded onely by the sun, now to see her so visited, that she was never one moment without company.

Don Alonso, the cavalier that I told you sought her in marriage, having heard the deplorable newes of her absence, not knowing no more then I what was become of her, absented himselfe from *Verence* sad almost to despaire; And I abandoning my house went to *Madrid* to endeavour to divert the melancholy which consumed me, yet ignorant, that the Traitor and my infamous sister were there. Having stayed there some time, a young gentlewoman of condition and very rich, bore me some affection and by this meeting I was confirmed in the opinion which I had, that love is a conjunction of stars, whose conformity infuseth affections into the soule.

I wholly imployed my selfe, then to search after the tyrants of mine honour, I enquired after them of all my friends, presuming to heare something in *Madrid*, amongst the confusion of the court, which for refuge to so many sortes of persons, but all my diligences were vaine.

During this exercise, one day as I went in the towne, a woman came to me and asked me my name, and I having told it her; she drew a letter from her bosome, put it in my hand and without giving me leisure to informe my selfe from whence she came: reade this letter, said she, and neglect not your good fortune; when she is so inclined to favour you. I was astonished with this short speech, opened the paper and read this discourse.

**A LETTER FROM AN VN-
KNOWNE LADY TO
LEONARD.**

YOur good countenance hath given me notice of your valour, the former testifieth your originall, and both excites me to the boldnesse, to beseech you to meete me to morrow at seaven a clocke in the morning in *Saint Heirosmes* meadow, I will there tell you more amply what I desire from your generositie. I imagine that the merit of a gentlewoman of honour may oblige you to this courtesie; but I hope more from the noblenesse of your courage. This bearer will serve you for a signe to know me.

In ending the reading of this letter, I begun to be ignorant of the author, and the confusion wherein I was, made me wish that the terme which shee had given me was expired to be delivered therefrom. I passed the night in this impatience, and the houre being come I rendered my selfe at the place assigned, where I presently saw arrive too women who had their faces covered with cipresse, which I did not thinke strange because it was the fashion, but I was astonished with the brightnes of the beauty of one of these women, which she permitted me to see, in letting fall her vaile upon her shoulder, as not thinking thereof, and lifting it up againe at the same time, I remained as immoveable at the splendour of this object; and as this had vailed a-

F

gaine

gaine her face, the other discovered hers, thereby to let me know that it was she that had brought me the Letter. Then I thought it convenient to premeditate some little discourse wherewith to approach this Beauty, for he doth much that is able to passe the first incounter of a faire Lady with respect, and without committing some impertinency.

Then animating my resolution, and using all the courtesie I could possible, I said to her; Madam, if I be too bold thus to accost you, the confusion which this paper hath given me, and this messenger which brought it me, may serve me for excuse. I have learned by the discourse thereof, that Heaven is willing to render mee worthy to serve you, and that you desired that I might come hither to receive the honour of your commands: And since that I am come, and have seen, there rests nothing but to overcome the obstacles, which would oppose themselves to your contentment, as I shall doe without doubt when you ordaine mee. Then this Lady againe discovered her admirable countenance, and looking upon me with gracious eyes, Cavalier, said she, I esteem my self much indebted to your courtesie, which merits more praise then excuse; but I blame her who hath caused you to come hither, and whose imbecility hath at this time so greatly prejudiced mine honour. Saying so, she turned towards Feliciane, so was she called that accompanied her, and severely chid her: Shee who was prepared of what she ought to say, made a thousand excuses to Theodore, this was the name of that Lady, who coming againe to me, spoke this language; I must confesse

I writ what this woman gave you, and that I am very happy that it light in the hands of a person of merit, as you are, although I doe not know you to be of the quality of him to whom I had intention my letter should have been given, who is a brave Gentleman.

Thereupon I tooke occasion to tell her what I was, but feigned to be come to the Court for better occasions then those that kept me there. She answered me, that the courteous actions I had shewn her, would serve for warrant to my words, but that her affaire was a secret, praying me to pardon her if she told me nothing thereof; for although she judged I might be confided in for things of much greater importance, so it was continued, she that the little knowledge which she had of me, hindred her from taking the boldnes of communicating her secrets unto me. She said all this to the end to oblige me to promise her to see her afterwards: But being at *Madrid*, rather to execute the effects of hate and vengeance, then seek the pastimes of love, I neglected this occasion, and civilly took leave of her.

Teodore stayed there very ill satisfied with her industry, and the little power which the darts of her eyes had had over my heart, she had good cause to be astonish'd therewith, for they had so many allurements and charms, that it had been impossible for another lesse afflicted then me to have resisted their force. So that considering my coldnes, she knew not whether she ought to attribute it to contempt, or accuse me of want of judgment, having not conceived her intentions. She finding her

selfe pressed with her passion, resolved to hazard what she had the most deare to satisfie it: and what is it which a woman animated with love will not prove to content her desires, and render those things easie, which seemes impossible unto her? But for to render this discourse lesse troublesome unto you, I must here make a digression. You must know then, that during this time, I met *Don Alonso*, whom I believed to have been far from *Madrid*; after embracements, and ordinary complements, which passe amongst friends, he told me, that besides his passed sorrowes he had a new displeasure at his heart; this inquietude made me curious to know the cause thereof; then in renewing unto me his ancient protestations of amity, he told me that the day before he was amongst young men, such as seek their pastime every where, and who give to their senses all they can wish for, who having discovered where *Eufemie* was, and knowing that he had heretofore had design for her, had let him see her unknown to her, he being disguised for that cause that he had like to have died at the instant of this Vision, and in this cruell displeasure it was some ease to him to advertise me thereof, to seek means to remedy it the most discreetly that could be possible.

These newes stirred up so violently my vengeance, that nothing seemed hard to me to execute; he named to me the street and house, and then left me: Almost at the same time, a servant that was unknown to me, came to tell me that there was a Lady in such a house that desired to see me in the evening, and communicate unto me something of

importance, and preſently went her way; the houſe which ſhe directed me unto was the very ſame that *Alonſo* had told me of, where reſided the originall of my opprobry. I conſidered the great impudence of her that deſired to ſee me in ſtead of flying from me, which made me ſuſpect ſome treaſon; but amongſt theſe confuſions, paſſing beyond all apprehenſions, I went to the lodging with a ponyard hidden. This new Meſſenger ſtayed for me at the doore, and conducted me into a chamber, where I found a candle upon a cup-board a little removed, and betwixt the wall and bed, a woman in petticoat and waſtcoat. I had ſcarcely perceived her, and begun to draw my ponyard, liſt-up mine arme to ſtrike her, when ſhe cryed, Ah Sir, what will you doe? I ſtayed my ſelfe, hearing by the ſound of her voice, that it was not ſhe I imagined: in the ſame time I ran to the candleſtick, and in approaching her, I knew that it was *Teodore*, whoſe feare had ſo increaſed her beauty, beſides the art which ſhe had joyned to nature, that I had taken her for a Goddeſſe, if I had not remembered my ſelf to have ſpoken with her in the meadow of *St. Hieroſme*. I was ſo extreemly ſurpriſed with this accident, that I doubted whether it was fond imagination or truth, I did not know whether *Alonſo* mocked me or no. In fine, after a long ſuſpenſion of minde, the apprehenſions of hate gave place to thoſe of love; and as I went to demand her pardon for my errour, there came into the chamber the ſervant that came to ſeeke me from her, accompanied with *Feliciane*, her firſt confident, who came running at the clamour of *Teodore*, thinking

that I would take away the life of her, that had ravished from me my liberty; and seeing me yet have the ponyard in my hand, which glissened by the light of the candle, they fled, crying murder, and for help. I went after them, to stay them, and upon the staires I met lascivious *Eufemie*, coming up with a torch in her hand, to know from whence proceeded this great disorder. For me, I confesse, that when I knew her, my whole body begun to tremble, being ready to discharge it self of the heavy burden of my affront; but as soone as she saw me with the ponyard in my hand, feare of death so violently transported her, that she cast her selfe out of a window of the staires which looked into the Court, I was very glad to see her resolution, thinking that in saving her selfe from my rigour, she would chastise her selfe, but it happened otherwise. I put my head out of the window, thinking to have seen her broken to pieces upon the pavement, and I saw her in the armes of *Don Pedro*, he who had debauched her, who happened to be directly under the window at the instant of her fall, he saved her in receiving her into his armes, for he was strong, and the window not very high. I ran hastily to take the occasion that was offered me to be revenged of them both in the same time, and ponyard them both together, but the two servants had shut the doore of the staires which entred into the court. Seeing then so many obstacles to the execution of my design, choler so violently surmounted me, that I went up the staires to cast my selfe out of the same window, I did it as soone as thought it, but my fall was not so happy as that of *Eufemie*, I hurt to

extreamely one of my legges, that when J would have gone to have ruined my enemies, it was impossible for me to goe, which gave them leisure to save themselves. *Teodore* altogether confused with this prodigious rumour, got quickly to her lodging, wherein she entered without wakening her father. J doubt not Gentlemen, but that you desire to know by what accident *Teodore* came into this place, but J will tell you the reason thereof.

Eufemy was lodged neare her house, and *Teodore* knowing the life which she led, determined to be acquainted with her, by the intermission of *Feliciane*, who went to make complements to her from her in the quality of a neighbour. At the end of some few dayes, she demanded permission of her Father (for her Mother was deceased) to goe see one of her cosens that was sick. The good man seeing his daughter excited with so charitable a desire, gave her leave, upon condition, that *Feliciane* should accompany her; for he confided in her, and thought the Chastity of *Teodore* in great safeguard with her.

They went abroad together, made some turnes in the streets, and stayed under a doore, where they disguised themselves, as well as they could; for feare of being known, and so entered into the house of *Eufemie*. She seeing *Teodore* at her house was ravished with that honour, as they are ordinarily who meddle with the trade she did, when other women come to visite them. *Eufemy* imbraced her a thousand times, transported with joy and admiration; and after many faire words given and received of one and the other, *Eufemie* prayed *Teodore* to tell her
F 4 wherefore

wherefore she had taken the pains to visit her. Then without suffering her selfe to be much entreated, she ingeniously declared to her that she had made choice of her lodging to satisfie an extreame passion; that she loved a Cavalier, which shee was a going to send for; and for that purpose, she prayed her to lend her a chamber for a little time, that passing for a Courtizan, she might without being known, content her amorous desires.

Consider a little how this Gentlewoman prostituted her honour, to adhere to her sensual fantasies! but what is it that a woman animated with love will not prove to make easie the things that seem to her impossible? let us now return to the house of *Eusemie*, to see what happened there, after the hurt which I had received in leaping out of the window. Her servant which fled away, seeing mee with the Ponyard in my hand, went in a fright to fetch a Justice, who being arrived, made me be carryed to prison, without any formalitie in a chaire. Before that this officer was entered into the house, the Pregnotory had received the depositions of two witnessses, who said that I had given to a woman three great stabs with a Ponyard, and that they had seen the wounds. The vulgar are such lyars, that they affirme to have seen that they onely dream'd of, and hold for truth what they have heard say, as if they had seen it. They would then know in what estate the hurt person was, but they found nothing but witnessses of my justification; neverthelesse I remained three weekes a prisoner. Doe but see a little how rigorously the innocents are handled by those people they call Justices.

In the mean while *Eufemie* & her protector changed either the country or quarter, but if they were in *Madrid*, they were well hid; for in six moneths that I stayed there, it was impossible for me to hear news of them, what diligence soever I could use. As long as my captivity lasted, *Teodore* sent often *Feliciane* to see me, and to offer me assistance and mony, but not having need, neither of the one nor other, both because of my justification, and not being in want; I thanked her, remaining alwaies extreamly obliged to her good will, and indebted to her affection, whereof she rendered me sufficient proofes during my imprisonment. If my body was set at liberty, my soule was enchained; the beauty of *Teodore* captivated all my powers; my understanding understood nothing but of her, my memory had no other image, my will walked not but by the shadow of hers: She sympathized to all my feelings; I failed not to be every night at the foote of her walls, and she never wanted to be at her window: I lived not but by her presence, nor her heart was ever at ease but when she saw me. One night when I went to prattle with her, and give nourishment to my flames, her father surprised her, which was the cause that the window was walled up, and that this Sun was long time eclipsed from me. After having suffered much for her absence, I had a Packet brought to me from the Poste, wherein was a Letter directed to the Father of *Teodore*. I presently imagined that this was not done without mystery; in this thought I opened the Letter, which was directed to mee, wherein I found this discourse, which I knew to be written by the hand of *Teodore*.

THE LETTER OF TEO- DORE TO LEONARD.

I have already rendered you so many proofes of my affection, deere *Leonard*, that I doe not thinke you can doubt thereof: If you desire to conserve it, you must assist me to warrant it from the dangers that threaten it, or I shall now know that yours is but dissimulation. My father treateth about marrying me to a Cavalier his kinsman, who is of the province of *Guipuscoa* as he himselfe is, and although there are presented many parties more advantagious for me, yet those of that country are of such humor; that they esteeme none but those of their owne nation; for that cause my father desires I should continue the alliance thereof: but my nature repugnes to those affections, because your merit makes me search meanes to avoid the constraint of this obedience. He expects hourelly this Cavalier, and I prepare my selfe for death every moment. I am told that he hath beene rustically educated; and to marry me to him was to renew the cruell tortures of the ancients, it is to tye a living person to a dead, to make it die with more horreur. Succour me in the danger I run, since it is onely your consideration that renders all propositions of marriage odious unto me. It will be easie for you to doe in taking a country habit, and faining your selfe to be called *Don Martin Elizalde*, and give this packet of letters to my father: this being done to save me, I will charge my selfe with the rest.

I was a little shaken in the resolution of this enterprise

terprise, but seeing that therein consisted the conservation of a thing so pretious, as was the love of *Teodore*, I clothed my selfe like a traveller, and mounted upon a Mule; I arrived all alone at the dore of my deere *Teodore*: I addrested my selfe to her father, gave him her letter, fained to be *Don Martin*, and saying that I was advanced two dayes journeys before my people and equipage, to satisfie the amorous impatience that I had to see his daughter. I was imbraced by him with much affection. All the family received me with applause; *Theodore* felt an interior joy, but she made appeare an exteriour modestie. I spoke little for feare of discovering my selfe: I was respectfull as a young lover and stranger. The letters which *Teodore* had sent were read, the which were effectually come from *Guipuscoa*, and light in her hands unknowne to her father; so that she had kept them to serve her selfe thereof upon occasion. I am astonished said her father to me, that my cosen your father sends me word, that *Don Martin* should begin his journey within a short time, and neverthelesse you are already arrived: I was already extreamely surprized with these words, but love inspired me suddainely with this reply. Sir said I, it is true that my father believed that I should not come so soone as I am, and to give you some excuse for my delay, he writ this letter, but my affection which could not permit any stay, solicited me to be the bearer thereof my selfe. Hee easily beleaved me, and two dayes after with the dispensation of the popes *Nuntio Theodore* and I were married without publication of banes. The day following I so admired at this successe that I knew not

not my selfe, I looked in the glasse fearing that I was some other. In truth I was so, for a wise man ceaseth to be himselfe when he marrieth. I contemplated my wife, who I saw ravished to have me for her husband; and in this conformitie of joy it seemed impossible that any humane contentment could equall my amorous imprisonment and her free possession.

In the very excesse of this joy I was in great care of what would be the successe of this intricacy. We expected from houre to houre *Don Martin*; at the beginning of the night one of his Laquyes arrived, saying that he would come the next day, and that he was got before to deserve the recompence of bringing the first newes thereof; when the good man my father in law heard that *Don Martin* was coming, he came up all moved into the chamber where I was set neere to *Teodore*, and asked me where I left my traine. Then in smiling I pushed his daughter with my elbow to the end she might answer for me to this question. She boldly told him that I was not *Don Martin*, but a cavalier of *Valence*, which equalled him in noblenesse, and surpassed him in riches, that she was assured of all this before she resolved her selfe to doe what she had done; and if that I wanted those advantages my merits and her affection would supply all. In fine, that since I was her husband there was nothing more to be said.

She spoke with the resolution of a wife that would please her husband: her father, who loved her dearly, answered her, that if she was content, he was so also: that he esteemed and honoured my person; but that he feared that *Don Martin* finding him-
selfe

ſelfe offended with this proceeding ſhould doe them ſome diſpleaſure. *Teodore* answered him, that he ſhould let her alone, and ſhe would remedy all, or would be expoſed to ſuffer a lone all the evill that could come thereof.

In this occaſion, I found that a womans ſpirit is extreemly ingenious in preſſing affaires. Her intention was, to counſell me to goe out of the houſe, and to court her as if I was her lover, and not her husband; then ſhe prayed her father, and advertiſed all the ſervants, who would have ſacrificed their lives to ſerve her, to make a joyfull reception of the ſtranger when he ſhould come, even as he was to be her husband. The aſſurance that I had of the goodneſſe of her wit, and ſeeing that I neither hazarded her honour nor mine owne in executing her adviſe, obliged me to ayde and conſent to her deſignes. I went out of the houſe the ſame day that this abuſed cavalier arrived. He was receiued with all the good cheare that was poſſible, but he appeared to the eyes and judgments of all thoſe of the houſe, a beaſt in humane forme, with an ill countenance, uncivill and unweildy, ſo that his impertinence rendered me the more commendable; which gave greater meanes to *Teodore* to conduct her project as ſhee had premeditated. From that day I went and came many times before the houſe: he tooke notice of theſe actions, and ſaw that I liſted up mine eyes every moment to the windowes where *Feliciano* appeared every moment; and he imagining that we did not perceive that he ſpyed our actions, he perceived that I gave a letter to the ſame *Feliciano*, which ſhe put in her boſome, and as being unſcene gave it to

Teodore

Teodore. In brieſe, every one of us played ſo well his perſonage in this Comedy, where *Don Martin* held the bable, that the catastrophe thereof was pleaſant for us, and ridiculous for him. Seeing ſo many witneſſes, that his Miſtreſſe had other thoughts then his, he begun to ſeeme melancholick; he ſpoke but by monosyllables; he neither eat nor ſlept, but to the halfe part: in fine, to deliver himſelf from theſe inquietudes, he preſſed the concluſion of the Marriage; but of the other ſide, *Teodore* prayed her Father in his preſence to deferre it yet, excuſing her ſelfe to be indiſpoſed to that action; and he, full of reſpect, or rather feare, reſolved to have patience and ſuffer.

In the interim, to the end to make him the more ſick, it came into my fancie to give a ſerenade to my wife, counterſeiting the amorous paſſionate, and having advertiſed her at what houre I would be under her window, ſhe came to the window, where ſhe heard theſe verſes recited.

*O buſie redious law of reaſon
How much art thou out of ſeaſon,
When nothing can thy fury quell,
And whilſt thy vaine ſeditious courſe
That would would my ſtrong paſſions force,
Makes me againſt my ſelf rebell.
Thy Phyſick cannot me reſtore,
Farewell and trouble me no more.*

*That Beauty that claimes heaven by merit
To which my undaunted Spirit
An eternall Victim's made,*

*From her sweet as modest eye,
Let such Flames and Arrows flye,
That 'twere a crime but to evade.*

*Thy Physick cannot me restore,
Farewell and trouble me no more.*

*Though hopelesse I am a presumer,
Yet to adore her 'tis my humour.
She's too chaste, too faire not to take,
Faith to what end then serves thy Treason,
When I have never so much reason,
As when I love it for her sake.*

*Thy Physick cannot me restore,
Farewell and trouble me no more.*

In such occasions, the greatest part of discreet Lovers, content themselves that the subject of their passion know, that it is they that give the Musick, and endeavour to hide the knowledge thereof from all others, but I proceeded otherwise: When the Confort was ended, I approached to those that had sung, and speaking high, made my selfe to be named, with design to be knowne; from thence I went to salute Teodore, and after having made her excuses, that the Verse and Musick were not so good as she deserved, and she had given me such thanks as civility obliged her to, I retired my self, testifying by my gestures and words, that I was much in her favour.

This jolly troop that accompanied me were not so modest, nor made so little noise before the house of Teodore, but that they wakened my poore competitor, or rather gave him subject to rise from his bed,

bed; for I thinke his inquietudes would not suffer him to sleep. He came then to heare this comfort, which was as odious to him, as pleasant to others that heard it, yet he spoke not one word thereof, no more than of the words he had heard, hee contented himselfe to confer with one of his servants, whom he had made his confident; who having more wit and understanding, let him know, that *Teodore* must needs be engaged in affection to him that gave her the Serenade; that such carriages were to be suspected, and that the excuses she had made to her Father for to hinder the execution of their marriage, testified sufficiently that she had other desires then his. In fine, he advised him to retire himselfe, if he would save his honour. *Don Martin* being perswaded by these reasons, faigned to have received a Letter from his Father, which called him home indiligence, because he was very sick, and taking leave of the father of *Teodore*, promised him to returne as soon as he could possible.

Thus *Teodore* quit her self ingeniously of this displeasing pretendant; we re-entered into the enjoying of our felicitie (one may so call a marriage, wherein the affections are conformable) The invention was published, and the ignorance of the *Biscain* Gentleman mocked.

But as there is no pleasure in this life which is not mingled with bitterness, not long after his departure my Father in Law took also leave of us for to go in to a better life. Then pressed with desire to see again my countrey and my other sister, which I had left at my house. I came to this town accompanied with my dear *Teodore*. It is now but three daies since I arrived

ved here, and this night I have received a writing from *Don Martin*, who incited by his Father and his Friends demands reason of me for the injury I have done him, in taking from him his wife. J prepared my selfe to meet him, not with designe to doe him any displeasure, but civilly to satisfie him, when a man came as a friend to admonish me not to stirre out but well armed, and with a good second, because the Letter that I had received came not from *Don Martin*, but from two of the Cosens of *Don Pedro*, in his name, who would set upon me to revenge their Kinsman, (whom they were told) I had killed. J was not so rash to despise this advertisement: J furnished my self with what was requisite to resist mine enemy, and accompanied my selfe with *Seigneur Marcell* my Kinsman, a generous man, and to whom J am obliged. We came together to the rendezvous, which was neare to the place where J set upon you; where J knew your valour, and where J hurt my heart with a perpetuall sorrow in hurting you; for reparation of which fault, and to convert our indifferences into affection, J consecrate to ease your troubles and misfortunes my house, my person and all J possesse.

Fenise thanked him for his offers, and thereupon they arrived in the towne of *Valence*, and at the prayer of *Leonard* went to light at his house, at the same instant a Chirurgion was fetched, who visited the wounds of *Fenise*, to the which he applied necessary plaisters, judging that they were not dangerous, but that they vould be long in healing. In effect two moneths vvere spent in this cure, during which time *Fenise* had in abundance all things, that

was necessary for him, so that being obliged with so many benefits, he discovered to him the very secrets of his heart, and his adventures, from the beginning untill the ravishment of *Laure*, the only thing which troubled him the most. *Leonard* promised to assist him in all that he could possibly, & assured him that he should have presently news thereof, or the Ravishers should not bee in *Valence*. These officious promises reanimated the courage, and augmented the health of *Fenise*; and as soon as he was able to goe abroad, he privately enquired who he was from whom he had received so great an affront.

The End of the first Booke of
F E N I S E.

THE



THE
SECOND BOOKE
OF
FENISE.

Whoſoever will make compariſon of the iniquities of this Age, with thoſe of times paſt, will eaſily ſee, that the World hath alwaies been vicious, and our nature alwaies fragile; when I remember the words of *Seneca*, *Vertues* are perished; *Fortitude*, *Pietie*, and *Modesty* have left us, and it is almoſt impoſſible for them to finde the way to returne againe unto us: I imagine with my ſelf, that *Fenife* lived in the time of *Seneca*, or that *Seneca* was preſent at the miſfortunes of *Fenife*.

The experience of the Chirurgeon, and the ſweet entertainment of his hoſt, advanced his recovery ſooner then was expected: as ſoon as hee was permitted to goe abroad, he beganne to make all the diligences imaginable to recover the delights of his life

life which he had lost in deere *Laure*. *Don Louis*, interesting himselfe as a perfect friend, in all things that concerned him, spared neither labour nor dexterity, discreetly to enquire in all places where he presumed to heare any thing thereof. They employed all the day in this troublesome exercise, but feeling that it advanced them nothing, they were therewith doubly wearied; their bodies laboured therein as well as their spirits; for it is true that the one cannot feele any evill but the other participates thereof.

Fenise scarcely knew what to resolve upon, if not to refer all his hopes unto time, when one day coming from the towne, dejected with wearinesse and vexation, he threw himselfe upon a bed to repose himselfe: it was there that his sorrowes increased, he suffered himselfe to be carryed away, with the excesse of his displeasures, and seemed to exhale his very soule with sighes and sobbs, when he heard one knock softly at his chamber doore, and as he had alwaies his imagination occupied with the object of *Laure*, and his heart with desires to see her againe, he perswaded himselfe that this was some one that came to give him advice of her. He arose quickly and saw a young maide of the house, who with an action, fearefull and hasty, sayd to him. Sir, I doubt not but you are astonished, to see me here, for admiration is the daughter of Novelty: here is a letter from *Celie* my mistresse which she prayeth you to reade, and satisfie her in what she desires of you, if the respect of an honourable Lady may oblige you thereunto. *Fenise* demanded of her who *Celie* was: the messenger answered him
that

that shee was the sister of *Leonard*, and that she could not talke to him any longer for feare the Cavalier should finde her speaking to him, or might have some shadow thereof. *Fenise* more astonished then before, received the letter, made a complement to the messenger and her mistrisse, and promised to obey all that she could command him, assuring himselfe that their discretion, would not engage him in uncivill enterprises. This maide being gone, *Fenise* was ill troubled to imagine what this Lady could desire from him, having never seene him; nevertheless after having many times contemplated the letter yet sealed, he resolved to open it, and saw that it conteyned this discourse.

A LETTER FROM CELIE TO FENISE.

THe esteeme and commendations which oftentimes I have heard my brother publish of your worth, excuse the boldnesse which I take to ad-dresse my selfe to you, for an affaire of great importance, it requireth a longer relation then this paper can containe, and lesse delay then you may imagine. You shall have the whole explication thereof this afternoone if you will take the paines to goe abroad. A maid shall be at the dore to conduct you to a place of assurance, where you shall see a person, whose entertaine shall supply the brevitic of this discourse. I perswade my selfe that your generositie will render you observant to these desires, and that you will esteeme your selfe indebted to me

for having given you an occasion to serve a faire Lady.

Never man was so surpris'd as *Fenise* was after the reading of this writing; he read it three or four times over, and the more he read it the more enigm was he found therein. He had divers imaginations, but that which troubled him the most, was the feare to be invited to some action, which might violate the respect of hospitality which he revered as things holy. In the end resolv'd to enterprise nothing unworthy of him, he went out of the house at the houre appointed, and walk'd thereabouts expecting the maid that was to be his guide. She came incontinent, her face covered with a vaile; she approach'd to *Fenise* and asked him his name; and seeing that it was he whom she sought, she pray'd him to follow her, but a litle behind for feare of being perceiv'd, and that he should enter boldly and without any apprehension, into the house whither shee carry'd him. *Fenise* answer'd her that he feared nothing, having nothing to lose but his life, and he need'd not search far, to be too unhappy. Saying thus he went after the maide, and not far from the place where they met, they secretly enter'd into a house, very faire without and curiously hung within; at the entry into the hall, this girle discover'd her face, and bad him yet follow her; she led him up a paire of stayres into an Anti-chamber, richly adorned with the fairest tapestry of *Flanders*: then his conductresse pray'd him to stay a litle, to whom he obeyed; in the interim he consider'd the proprietie of this house, and to what end he was brought

brought thither: but incontinently the maide returned, and made him enter into a great cabinet, filled with an infinite of rich furniture, as pictures, glasses, plate, candlesticks, and armes of silver gilt, and other curiosities very delightfull to the sight, a great piece of Turkey tapistrie covered the floore, upon the which were great store of cushions, and cushionets, of velvet, and imbroydery. When he was there, there entered a young Lady, perfectly faire, cloathed in mourning, but with such order, comelinese, and good carriage, that with this modest and sad colour, she had more Majesty and Lustre, then another would have had in the most lively colours and shining attires. Having saluted one the other, she made them give him a seat, sat herself down by him, and commanded her women to retire themselves to the end she might discourse more freely of her secrets.

Then *Fenise* spoke, and by a well polished complement let her know his ability in speaking, and the vivacity of his wit: This Lady answered him with all the courtesie and civility imaginable. Sir (said she) I thanke my good fortune, for having rendred me so happy as to have your acquaintance, to trust you with an important affaire, wherein I have need of two excellent qualities, which I believe to finde in your person, discretion, and valour; the one for to keep secret the project, and the other for to execute it. And since that you offer me your assistance in this occasion, I will take you at your word, upon the assurance that I have, that you have too much generosity to faile in the effects of your words. But before that I explicate my selfe further,

it is necessary that I make you a little discourse of my life, to move you the more to assist me in the afflictions which oppresse me.

THE HISTORIE OF
RUFINE AND DON
IOUAN.

Although that my Parents are not much accommodated with the favours of Fortune, so it is that Nature gratified them with an honour which cannot be purchased with riches, which is noblesse. With this advantage I was borne in *Seville*, one of the most pleasant Towns the Sun shineth upon. I am called *Rufine*: My Father and Mother seeing that Heaven had not made me ill-favoured, if I may speake it without vanity, had care to bring me up according as their little estate would permit. I had attained to the sixteenth year of my age, when a Cavalier of this Town of *Valence*, of an illustrious name, coming from *Lema*, a Towne and Realme of the West Indies, took Port at *Sevill*, full of prosperity and honour, and my destiny having one night conducted me into the company of Ladyes where he was invited, she also made him cast his eyes upon me, and made me the object of his desires. After which time, to abridge my discourse, I was delivered into his free possession, but by the holy waies of Christian Lawes. Not long after he had deligne to returne into his Countrey, and to take me with him, there to establish our perpetuall abode; and for-

Forasmuch an honest wife ought to have no other will but that of her husband, I willingly went with him, and we lived together six years, which was the time that Heaven had limited to finish my contentment with his life. I then remained alone, yet accompanied with riches and sorrow, for temporall goods are not alwayes the riches of the soule, from whence it proceeds that there is many poor contented, and rich miserable. He left me the only inherrix of all his possessions, by which means I was respected and served as a Queen. My sorrowes for the losse of this brave Cavalier kept me company two years entire; but in the end, suffering my selfe to be perswaded by the consolations of my friends that visited me, I begun to leave my solitude, and to frequent those conversations whither my youth led me. In one of these Assemblies I was considered by a Gentleman, a stranger which arrived in this Towne about three moneths since, a man of a good countenance, and as well accomplished as any other of his condition, suffering himselfe to be wounded by mine eyes (as he said) he found an invention to declare his inquietudes by a Letter, which I favourably received, and found it so well indicted, that it incited me to esteem the Author, and give him a civill answer, from whence he took occasion to render me proofes of a sincere passion, and the services of a voluntary slave. In the end, his continuall submissions obliged me to wish him well, and for to render him some proofes thereof, I permitted him to visit me one evening after supper, but my Garden-window was betwixt us. In the enjoying of this honour, after having told
me

me that he was of *Toledo*, and was called *Don Juan de Valazquez*, he made me a thousand protestations of service, swearing to renounce all remembrances to remaine all his life at my feet if it pleased me, and esteeming himselfe most happy to be under the subjection of so adorable a Mistressse; these was the termes which he used. But seeing that his passion begun to enter into excesse, I prayed him to retire himself, shewing him that this was enough for the first sight; assuring him that I honoured him with all my heart. He obeyed me, and at the same time went his way, and left me as voluntarily obliged; for after a woman of honour hath given her word, she is bound to accomplish it.

He saw me many other times in the same manner, and one night, knowing that I would not agree that he should come into my house, nor adhere to his desires, if he did not give me his word to marry me, he made me promise thereof, in taking my hand and kissing it, believing already, that under this weak assurance, I must accord to what he pretended, and by and by open him the doore of my house and honour; but he saw himselfe deceived in his attempt. Having received his protestations, I made him answer, that since we were both of free condition, and that there was nothing that could crosse our mutuall intentions, the next day we would dispose our selves to confirme our faith in the presence of the sacred Ministers, and after that, he should have an absolute power over my person, goods, and life.

When he saw me in this resolution, he begun to demand term for the execution thereof, saying that
before

before that, he must receive newes of letters of Exchange which he had sent for, to the end he might solemnize the Marriage according to his quality. In a word, from that houre he became lesse inflamed, more carelesse in his visits, and more retained in his carriage, which let me know the great errour I had like to have fallen into, if I should have suffered him to have approached me neerer then the thicknesse of the barres of my Window. The knowledge of his merits which I had got by his frequent conversation, left not my minde so free but that I had an extream sorrow to see my self so separated from him; I begun to reason upon his actions, and to seek the cause of his coldnesse, and to speak truly to you, either by love, jealousy, or curiositie, or it may be by all these affections together, I found means to speak with a woman that dwelt in his house, and to oblige her by presents and promises to tell me the particulars of the life he lead. I found this woman so willing to satisfie me, that she told me more then I expected. She told me that *Don Jonan* had with him an extream faire Lady, which was of his Country, and who was called *Laure*. That at first when he brought her to *Valence*, he could not make her resolve to adhere to his desires, but at the present she believed she was pacified and reduced to his will.

But Sir, What is it that the malicious industry of men will not accomplish? And to what fragilitie is not the inconstant nature of a woman subject? I thought it strange that this Lady should shew her selfe so cruell towards him, since that she came with him, and when I demanded of this woman the cause

cause thereof, she told me, that she had learned all of a servant of *Don Iovans* (with whom I hear since she hath good intelligence) who told her, that *Don Iovan* was become amorous at *Toledo* of a Lady, Mistresse to one of his friends : That having been forced to absent himse'fe for a Homicide which he had committed, and not being able to carry her with him, he had left this servant at *Toledo*, to see what would become of this Lady during his absence, and to let him know when it would be expedient to execute the intencion which he had to steale her secretly, and to carry her away with him ; so that this servant faithfull to his Master, having discovered, that this Lady was in the company of her true Lover, who was conducting her to *Valence*, he had followed them from place to place disguised, and had got before them the last dayes journey with diligence, to advertise his Master thereof, who at the same instant accompanied with him and another of his friends disguised, and put themselves in ambush in the way, and with more treason and industry than valour, had surprised these Lovers, and stolne away the Lady, whom hee keeps at this houre in his house. In fine, by force of flatteries, services, and by diverting her by all the recreations he could devise, he had not onely made her forget her displeasures, but had rendered her sensible of his passion.

After this discourse, I remained in the condition of a jealous person, who hath found the cause of his disease, protesting to search all meanes to revenge my selfe. It is long since I have been troubled for this purpose ; for although this passion be violent

lent amongst women, and in me more than any other; yet I would not make my infirmity publicly knowne; I desire to redresse it. And communicating my feelings yesterday to Madam Celie, mine aliant, if amitie contracts aliance, she told me of the merits of your person, and amongst others, your courage and discretion; so that considering all these circumstances, and also that you are a stranger in this towne, and of the countrey of *Don Jovan*, I determined with the counsel of *Celie*, to discover to you the evill which persecutes me, to trust to you with my secrets, and to demand your assistance to put my spirit to repose. I doe not hope it from any merit of mine own, but from your proper valour, which will not suffer you to refuse a curtesie to a Lady which never will be ingratefull.

It was not necessary to give so many markes to *Fenise*, to let him know that the authour of this affront had been before trusted with the secreets of his Loves. But in dissembling his anger and jealousy, he busied himselfe in thinking what art hee should use to revenge himselfe of this perfidious, being thereunto engaged more by his proper feelings, than by the interests or prayers of *Rufine*. Madam, answered he, you have shewne so much wit and judgement in the discourse you have now told me, that in trusting me with your secrets you have ravished from me my liberty. I can no longer dispose of my will, I am ready to obey all you please to command; assuring you that I will be the instrument of your vengeance, and the executer of your desires. I finde so much cowardlinesse and infamy in the soul
of

of *Don Iovan*, that although he bee of noble extraction, I esteeme him no more than an infamous person. It is not the same thing to be born noble, and to be so, for there are many that are noble, without being borne so ; and also many that degenerate from their noblenesse by the unworthy actions which they commit. Sir, replied *Rafine*, I esteeme my selfe no longer unhappy, since that Heaven hath now given me so generous a defender as you are.

But to beginne our enterprise, I desire that you should this night know the house and person. I have already made one of my Cosens become acquainted with *Laure*, she shall anone goe to visit her, and you with her, if you please, disguised, and in the quality of her servant to waite upon her. The evill that I desire to doe to this ingrate, by your meanes is no other then what he hath already done to the Cavalier from whom he hath ravished *Laure* his honour, and joy all together.

Fenise was then in humour to undertake any thing, nothing seemed difficult unto him : And remembering himselfe of the recitall which *Rafine* had made him, he judged that he was one of the three with his face covered, that had left him for dead in the mountaines of *Toledo*, as we have told you in the beginning of this booke. He was confirmed in this opinion by that (which *Laure* had told him) he had done the night he had slain *Felix*, which was to goe to her chamber under pretence to warrant her from the danger of Justice ; and all this was but adding oyle to the fire of his choler. In fine, the time that *Rafine* and he desired with him

patience arrived : *Narcisse* which was her Cosen came at the houre she was sent for, and going out with *Fenise* came incontinently to the house of *Don Iovan*. *Fenise* let *Narcisse* goe in, and attended at the doore disguised with a false beard, faining to bee servant to this Gentlewoman, who was courteously received by *Laure*, and welcomed by *Don Iovan*; if not as the cosen of *Rufine*, at the least in the quality of the intimate friend of *Laure*. *Fenise* was not so farre from the roome where they conversed, but that he heard all that they did and sayd, in walking; for the doore was open. He knew his perfidious friend and ingratefull Lover, whose repose of spirit he admired, whilst his suffered so great inquietudes. He represented to himselfe a thousand things, whose conclusion's were alwaies augmentations to his displeasures. Many times he was upon the very point to execute his vengeance, so farre did his anger transport him; then he deferred it, expecting a better occasion.

He forgot himselfe to remarke their discourses, familiaritie and love; he almost lost his wits in considering the strange change of *Laure*. At every moment he saw gestures, or heard such discourses as made him die with despite, and yet he beheld and hearkened carefully. So the greatest evill of jealous persons (and what hinders them from finding remedie) is to desire things which kill them. Every minute seemed to him an age, but as ages have their beginnings, they have their ends. *Narcisse* at the end of a little time took leave, & went out of the room. *Laure* went out with her to accompany her, where *Fenise* had occasion to consider her as well with extreme

treame sorrow to see her so ingratefull, as to see her so dishonestly abandoned, to the possession of another, he could not speake; and had it not beene for feare of giving advantage to his enemies he had at that time committed some excesse. *Don Jouan* would waite upon *Narcisse* to her house, although she prayed him not to take that paines, she having a man with her for that purpose, but the courtesie of the Cavalier prevailed with her. When *Fenise* saw so neere to him the author of his troubles, he had attempted upon his life, had it not beene for the respect he bore to *Narcisse*; But *Don Jouan* having left her at one of her friends houses where she fained to have businesse, *Fenise* followed him, and not far from thence, overtooke him with his false beard which disguised his voice as well as his face, for he held it in his teeth by a little stringe of wyer; Sir, said he, faining not to know him, is it not you who is called *Don Jouan*? yes answered the traytor, what would you have with me? there is, answered *Fenise*, a Lady without the gate of the towne in a Coach who desires to communicate to you a secret of importance, if you will see her: Who is she, said *Don Jouan*, I doe not tell you her name, answered *Fenise*, not being assured that you will take the paines to goe to her: but you need feare nothing, you shall speake to her alone, I will goe upon your word, replied *Don Jouan*, though it may be another would make difficultie thereof; saying thus, he lead him to a place a little distant from the towne, when *Don Jouan* looking on all sides him, and seeing no body, whether he knew *Fenise* or no, he asked him where the Lady was; you shall see her presently answered *Fenise*.

Then

Then Don Iouan drawing his sword and retiring three paces, told him that before he passed further he would know who he was. I am content said generously our intraged lover casting away his false beard, looke upon me, I am *Fenise*, and know, that I have but thus long retarded to make thee feeble the chastisement of thy treason, to bring thee into a place where there may be no witnesses of the vengeance I am going to take of thy treachery, for I hope that heaven the revenger of wrongs will assist me in this action: in saying so he threw away the scabbard of his sword and poinyard, and put himselfe into the posture of an active and valiant man; Don Iouan knowing who he had before him, full of confusion or shame, made him no satisfaction, but on the contrary told him, that he had long desired this meeting, and that he was glad to see him in this estate, for to take his life from him generously; and by his death to enjoy more freely the contentment which he possessed. He could say no more because *Fenise* pressed him so quickly, or rather so mortally, that it behooved him to moove all his members, in stead of his tongue to defend himselfe from the furious thrusts which he gave him, being newly angred with the insolent words of his enemy. But what violence or addresse he could use in this action; he presently felt the just punishment of his treachery: *Fenise* gave him three wounds, by the which his soule found her desired issue out of his traiterous body. His conquerour seeing him dead was sorry for him, for so deplorable a death as that was, would touch the heart of any generous man. But advising himselfe, that he ought more to

H

the

the satisfaction of the offence then to pittie, he determined to doe as much to *Laure*, to the end to chastise her inconstancy, exterminate her beauty, and to give a new example to ingratefulls; to this end he threw away his hat and cloake into a pit, and tooke those of his enemy, which was of a higher colour, and being so covered, he went to the doore of the house of the dead man, where *Laure* was: he knocked, one of the servants looked out of a Balconia, and beleiving that it was *Don Johan* her master descended presently to open him the doore, but not finding the key in the locke she went up againe to looke it. Whilst *Fenise* stayed at the doore consulting what he should say and doe to his ungratefull and perfidious *Laure*, when he heard a great brute of armes at the end of the streete; which made him feare to be interrupted in his designe, if they came not presently to open him the doore, because these people being moved advanced towards him, it happened as he apprehended: the quarrellers killed one of the troope, who crying for confession made all the rest fly. Yet *Fenise* had not stirred from the doore, alwaies hoping to enter, but either by the servants too great hast to seek the key, or rather by the good fortune of *Laure* she could not finde it. The clamours of this dying man neere the place where *Fenise* was, brought thither incontinently the justice, which obliged him to abandon his place; for although he was innocent of this murder, he feared to be knowne the homicide of *Don Johan*, whereof he bore witnesses with him, which were his hat and cloake. He was so slow in retiring himselfe that the justice perceived him when he be-

gun to dislodge, and seeing no suspicious person neere the dead man but him, one of the archers, the most disposed, begun to run after him. *Fenise* perceiving himselfe to be pursued, employed all his force to save himselfe from the clawes of this Archer, but he being more agile then our cavalier, obliged him to stay after a long course: so that *Fenise* seeing the wilfullnesse of this man returned with his sword in his hand to cut his hamstrings to hinder his course, which this companion seeing and wisely judging that a single man ought not to presse another that was armed but to save himselfe, returned almost as fast as he came. At this instant *Fenise* found himselfe neere a gate of the towne which was yet open because it was not ten a clocke. Then he resolved for many reasons to quitte *Valence* by the favour of the night, but as he begun to execute this determination, he heard that they begun to ring the bell; designed to advertise the officers of Justice of the company, that there was a malefactor escaped; which was the custome of the country. To avoid being taken, he crossed the country it may be because he did not know the waies, and went about two leagues so tired that he was forced to yield to his wearinesse and repose himselfe in expecting the day. He sat downe at the roote of a tree, his body being wearyed with travell and his spirit perplexed with a thousand troublesome thoughts. But he had scarcely begun to take breath, when in the midst of the silence of the night, he heard the echoes of the barking of dogs whose voices beat against a Rock, whereby he knew that these dogges were a good way from him; which made him judge

that there was some house where he might retire himselfe. He quitted his tree, went whither the barking of the dogges guided him, and arrived at the foot of a hill, upon the side whereof he saw a poore shepheards cabbin covered with bowes: he entred into it, and found no body there, but onely sheep skins which served for a bed to the inhabitants. The extreame wearinesse and sleepinesse which he had, obliged him to search some place to repose in, and not finding any more commodious then those skins, he lay downe upon them. The shepheards hosts of this cabbin, advertised by the barking of their dogges, that there was some wolfe about their flocks, were gone out for to chase him, and by reason of their great hast had forgotten to cover their fire: so that presently after *Fenise* was a sleepe, he was awakened by the sharpe stinke of a thicke smoake, which begun to choake him, the fire having taken hold of leavy fagotts. He sought an issue to get out of this danger, and saw himselfe besieged on one side with flames, and on the other barricadoed with great pieces of wood: then he made reflection upon the estate he was in, and judged that this was to punish the offences he had committed, and as he made this pious meditation, and assayed to make his way over these pieces of wood, the shepheards arrived at their little house, which they found all on fire, they presently indeavoured to quench it. *Fenise* having perceived them implored their ayd, crying withall his power: these poore rustiques were greatly astonished to see a man so well clothed in the middle of so fearefull a danger, not knowing how he came thither. In the
end

and employing all their force and diligence, they got him miraculously out of this little hell without much hurt, but not without much fear; for as these good people removed the wood to helpe him out, they let in aire which augmented the flames, wherewith the unfortunate Cavalier had like to have been devoured. Truly a man may bee esteemed very unhappy, when those that would procure his good doe him hurt, and that the ease they would give him turneth into the encrease of his paines. *Fenise* having taken fresh aire, thanked his benefactors, and to give some satisfaction to their curiosity to know how he came into this danger, he invented an adventure, and told them that he was come from *Barcelone* to goe to *Valence* the lye was pardonable, since that in speaking the truth his life was in danger; (for he feared he was followed) that being a quarter of a League from this Cabbin, wandring betwixt Dog and Wolfe, he met with Theeves that had dismounted him, that being escaped from them he had lost his vway, and going he knew not vvhicher, he had perceived their cabbin, and had retired himselfe thither, expecting the day. These simple persons believed what he sayd, and endeavoured to entertaine him the best they could: They killed a Kid, and made him eate with them, afterwards they dressed him a lodge with branches to keep him from the humidity of the night; and thus *Fenise* expected the Sunnes returne.

As soon as day appeared he would take leave of his hostes, and yet try the effects of his Fortune, forcing himselfe to overcome her; for he was re-

solved rather to tire her with persecuting him, then to make it knowne to her, that he wanted patience to suffer. He then renewed his thankses, and prayed them to shew him the way to *Barcelone*, excusing himselfe that he was not able to stay longer with them, because of important affaires which already suffered, by his delay and ill fortune, which obliged him to return the same way he came. Although they opposed his desires with their prayers, they could not stay him any longer in this countrey place, for he knew well that a village life ought to be elected for ever, or avoyded as soon as could be, for feare of their taking of some impression of malice, or clownish behaviour : Besides, hosts are maisters of the house the first day, friends the second, and enemies the third : In the beginning they bring joy, in the middle pains, and at the end trouble.

They sent a Shepheard with him to set him in the way he desired, and which he followed to *Moraiédre*: He there found a Traveller which came from *Valence*, of whom he demanded what newes there, who told him, that there was found out of the towne, a dead Cavalier, that the brute went that he had been slain by one of his friends, and that the Justices sought after him by horse and foot. This news made him change his course and draw towards *Sarragoce*, alwaies going out of the highway, and in the night being favoured by the Moones brightness, which was then towards the Full, about his third nights voyage, being cleare and bright, passing by the side of a Wood, he heard a plaintive voice, which endeavoured to oblige some one to moderate his

his fury. *Fenise* judged by the delicatenesse of the voice, that it was a woman, which made him advance to succour her; as he came neare the place where she was, her complaints ceased, and in another tone of voice, more bold, he heard her speake these words; Nowv infamous thy blood shall repaire the affronts thou hast done me. And at the same time, the voice of a man replied; Ah trayterresse! I never expected lesse from thy cruelty, and the vicious life I have led. Our Cavalier was ready to enter into the thick wood, where hee heard them speake, but he was stayed by a man and a woman that came from thence; she proper and curiously attired, he strongly set, and of a valorous resolution, who presented to his head the mouth of a Pistoll; stand said he, returne from whence thou camest, or thou diest.

Fenise so surpris'd and threatned, would not hazard himselfe, believing that there was nothing there that did concern him. He stayed, and saw these two without speaking word take two Mules that were tied to a tree, mount upon them, and ride fast away from the place where he was, and out of his sight. His curiositie and valour would not permit him to retire himself without looking what was become of him, who seemed by his sad words to testifie his last sorrowes: He entred by the same place the others came out of, and found a dead man upon the ground, wallowing in his blood. He was considering this poore man, and discoursing upon the miseries of this life, when he heard a little noise of men which approached him, but he had not time to know what they were, for as soon

as they had perceived him, they fell upon him, bound his eyes, and called him traytor, homicide, and many other injurious names, and lead him tied and bound into a Village which was near that place. He endeavoured to justify his innocence by reasons, and to buy himself out of their hands by money; but whatsoever he could say or do, he could not moderate their violence. They put him laden with irons into a stinking dungeon, and there left him untill the next morning, abandoned to a thousand sad thoughts: The day being come, he that executed the office of Judge, but yet without judgment, came to interrogate him, and demand of him the confession of the crime he had committed. He asked him questions so impertinent, that he could scarcely answer to them, but in lifting up his eye-brows and shoulders. He knew nothing of what they questioned him, and the Judge was perswaded, that he vvho vvvas purely ignorant, vvvas maliciously vvvilfull; so that he vvvas ready to condemn him to death by the suffrage, as well of those that helped to take him, as by the opinion of him that gave him advice thereof, when the Inne-keeper of the Village came to tell him that he believed that the prisoner he was about to condemn was innocent of the crime he was accused of, and being asked upon what reasons this opinion was grounded, he thus answered; I remember that about eight or ten dayes agoe, which is about the time you took this prisoner, that the Gentleman with whose death you accuse him, came to lodge at my house, with a faire woman, who said they came from *Sarragoce*; and at the same instant came also another
Gen-

Gentleman from *Castille*, whom I lodged in another part of the house, separate from them : He who accompanied this woman, being gone abroad (as I think) to walk about the Town, she came out of her chamber, and went to seek the *Castillian*. I who saw her goe without being my self perceived, hearkened curiously at the door, to know what she went to doe, and I heard her hold him this discourse. Sir, having seen you arrive at this place, and presenaly considering your fashion and actions, I believed that so many advantages of nature could not willingly meet in a common man, and thereupon imagining that you are a Gentleman, I have taken the boldnesse to have recourse to you, to endeavour to save my self from the extream perill that threatens me.

Time, which presseth me, will not permit me here to recount the strange misfortunes of my life, nor of what Country I am, it shall suffice me now to tell you that I am called *Eusemie*, and that a Cavalier who is here lodged with me, and now gone abroad, stole me from my house, under promise of Marriage. After having stayed some time with him, the ardour of his passion died, since which time he hath used me unworthily, and a thousand times witnessed an evill and unthankfull nature, contrary to the faith he had sworne to me. I know not whither he carrieth me at this present ; but the great love he bore me at the beginning, is changed into so cruell a hatred, that I doe but expect the houre when he shall take away my life, when he shall finde a place commodious for that purpose, as I may conjecture by his fear-
full

full threatnings, and his speeches, which have been reported to me; so that fearing that his hatred and fury may transport him, I cast my self at your feet, humbly beseeching you to take me into your protection, since that it seems that Heaven hath miraculously brought you hither for this action of piety. This Lady spoke these words after so sweet a manner, that they were able to move compassion in the most barbarous soule; for my part, I was sensibly touched therewith. As soon as she had made known her intentions to this Cavalier, he promised to serve her in all things she should think him worthy; then they spoke softly together; I believing it was because I had stirred the latch of the doore in approaching to hearken, I retired my self for feare of being surpris'd in so ill an action as to pry after the secrets of others, and she came out presently after to attend the returne of her dangerous conductor. As soon as he came in, I took notice of his behaviour, and saw that with a fierce look he told this young Lady that he would be gone before Sun-set, as he was. Scarcely were they out of my house, when the Gentleman to whom the Lady had spoken, and who had promised her assistance, followed them. And I fearing some unhappy accident, sent one of my servants after them to know which way they went, to the end to give you notice thereof to follow their steps, and prevent the evill that threatned so many people. This boy did as I had appointed him; but when he saw appearances so conformable to what I had heard, as he came to tell me what he had done, he met an Archer, to whom he told it. He going

to seek his companions to take them along with him, came too late, the murder was committed; so that they have brought to you this unhappy prisoner, which I hold for innocent, for he was none of the company of those that lodged at my house. I durst not speak of what I have now told you, for feare I might thereby get some displeasure; but seeing the danger that threatneth a man whom I presume not culpable, I had rather hazard my repose, then see him suffer without deserving it. The Judge his Sonne came in upon this discourse, who confirmed what the Inne-keeper had said, assuring that he had newly met upon the way of *Tortosa* a man and a woman mounted upon Mules, with all the tokens and marks the Inne-keeper had spoken of.

The Judge informed of these circumstances, went to see the prisoner, whom he found lesse sorrowfull then he left him, for delay made him hope the verity of his innocency would be discovered; he spoke to him with a countenance lesse severe then before, exhorting him, not as Superiour, but friend, to declare to him how he came neare the dead corps in the wood, to the end he might help him to justifie himself.

Fenise, who then saw the Judge more reasonable then when he was brought before him, satisfied him with reasons so accompanied with truth and likelihood; that the Judge found them conformable to the relation of his Sonne, and the Inne-keeper, he determined to set him at liberty; but how innocent soever he was found, he could not get out without leaving the bloud of his purse.

The

The talents of Pregnotories, Serjeants, and Gallers, are too sharp, not to scratch a man, and it is a great grace when he escapes without being torn in pieces.

Our Cavalier seeing himself at liberty, resolved to goe into *Italy*, and quit his Country *Spain*, since that she used him as a Step-mother, to try if in changing the Land, he should not also change his fortune.

For this purpose he took the way to *Barcelone*, where he arrived without any other disgrace, but to suffer much by necessity upon the way, because of the great charges he had been at to purchase his innocence. He could well have found friends in this great Town who would have supplied his necessities, but he feared to be knowne; so that he chose rather to suffer amongst strangers, then to be beholding to his Country-men. Then a Ship made saile towards that Country, he put himself in the service of an Italian Lord, near whom his good behaviour and wit had got him an access free enough. He imbarqued himself, and arrived happily at the Port of *Gennes*, and from thence to *Naples*, where was the abode and family of this Italian. This Cavalier had found so great merit in *Fenise*, that he loved passionately his conversation, one should never see him but with this Spaniard by his side, so that he did not treat him as a servant, but as a friend. *Ricard*, so was this Lord called, had an urgent affaire, which obliged him to goe by night to seek the Vice-Roy of *Naples*, to conferre thereof with him, because it was a businesse of State. He took *Fenise* with him to serve him for companion

nion and safeguard. He entered into the lodgings of the Vice-Roy, and in the interim *Fenise* walked in the great and spacious roomes of the pallace, in expecting his Master : And as curiositie is the daughter of idlenesse, *Fenise* not knowing how to passe the time, was descended into the Court of the Castle, and approaching to a little doore, where he heard a noyse of mens voices : hee listened, and knew incontinent that this was the lodging of the slaves of the Vice-Roy, Turkes and Barbarians, which spoke their naturall Language, believing that no body heard them, because they judged that all was in bed, or that they knew not their language. But *Fenise*, who knew it perfectly well, having learned it of his fathers slave, as wee have sayd, heard that they had conspired against the life of the Vice-Roy, and the most resolute of the Troope spoke thus to his companions. What my friends, shall we yet deferre the execution of our vengeance ? Have we lost our courages in losing our liberty ? Shall we be willing to die, without selling our lives to those that would have them ? You know well the resolution I have taken, to have reason of the Vice-Roy, whose people have killed my brother, and drowned my wife and ship, and for this effect, I have suffered my selfe to be made a captive to my enemies, to the end to finde that in Peace which I could not in Warre, by reason of my want of power ; you know also how willingly you offered your selves to accompany me in this design, without being forced thereunto by persuasions. This being, if I suffered my selfe to be taken alive, and you come with me for this intention,

to

to what purpose serve so many delays, but to certifye our cowardlynesse? For my part, I know I must dye, but I shall expire contented, in seeing my selfe satisfied? Courage then my dear friends, animate your just fury in exciting your cruelty; and since that our liberty is engaged for the end of this action, let us enterprize it boldly, if we perish therein, at the least it will be with much honour. Then all the Troope renewed their oaths of fidelitie, protesting to enterprize valiantly all that he should ordaine; and under this assurance he proceeded. I shall finde an invention, sayd he, to hide my selfe to morrow in the Antichamber of the Vice-Roy, and you, when all shall bee in the greatest silence, shall come and make a noise in the Hall, for to let me know when you are there. At the same instant you shall endeavour to amuse the Guards, whilst one of you open me the door with this double Key; for when I shall hear you, I will fall upon his person, and take away his life in a moment; then I will come to finde you, and we will attempt together to force the door to get out; for though we should dye there, we had better end so than otherwise. All his disciples answered, that they would assist him in all things, and that the recompence of the perill they were to hazard themselves in, consisted in his satisfaction. Thereupon they held their peace, and *Fenise* considering this bloody conspiracy, judged that hee ought to prevent the effect thereof, and that he was obliged to advertise the Lord against whom it was made thereof, esteeming it was rather the providence of heaven which had conducted him

him to the slaves door, then his curiositie. Without staying the coming of the Italian Lord his Master from entertaining the Vice-Roy, he went to the entry of the chamber, and made him be called, and succinctly instructed him with the furious designe of the Infidels. The Cavalier entered againe into the Vice-Royes chamber, and led *Fenise* with him, that he might heare him, and might looke for present remedy for the danger that threatened him. At the beginning he doubted of the truth of this relation; but seeing that *Ricard* assured him of the honour and honesty of the author, he thanked him for his advertisement. *Fenise*, who had a subtle wit, made the Vice-Roy yet more beholden to him, teaching him an industry how to make these slaves feeble the effect of the evil they had plotted. Sir, sayd he, your Excellency shall command that they bring you a criminall that hath deserved death, the which shall be armed to the neck in a coate of Maile, and put on one of your rich Suites upon it, he shall be hazarded to the prooffe of my words, he shall be put into your chamber, and there left alone, where they say you often stay slumbering after meat: But to the end that this criminall may the better represent your person, it will be good to let him know, that he is so accomodated to intrap a slave, that would attempt against your life, assuring him that you will pardon him. This being done, occasion must be given to the slave who seemeth to be the head, the most disposed, and the strongest of the conspiratours (as farre as I have been able to observe by the cranny of the door)

door) to hide himselfe where he will : Your Excellency shall in the interim bee safe , and your guard shall be ready to fall, as well upon the executors of this detestable project , as upon the the complices, to the end that none of them may escape. So you shall triumph over these Blood-suckers, and thanke God for having preserved you, by my intermission ; for the which I thanke him of my part, and esteeme my selfe most happy.

The next morning all was executed as it had been propounded ; the groomes of the chamber, and other servants of the Vice-Roy, went and came into the chamber where the criminall was disguised, with the same respect as if it had been their Maister : having left them all alone, and bee faigning to bee asleep, the slave that was hidden came softly, and holding his breath for feare of being heard, fell upon the criminall, and gave him five or six blowes with a knife upon the belly (seeing him in habits Royall) but without offending him, because his coat of Maile guarded him : At the cryes of the criminall, the Gaurds of the Vice-Roy came running ; but as they presented the points of their Partizans to this slave to slay him ; he seeing he was not succoured by his companions, thinking he had killed the Vice-Roy, he gave himselfe three stabs into his left side, whereof he died, before he could bee carryed out of the chamber, which he had stained with his infamous blood.

The Vice-Roy beheld this spectacle with horror, being greatly astonished therewith. He imbraced *Fenise*, and prayed him to take such part with him

him as he pleased, to the end that when time and occasion should be presented he might testify unto him, how much he esteemed his service he had rendered him. *Ricard* counselled him to accept the Vice-Roy's offer, assuring him that he was a magnanimous seigneur who knew well how to acknowledge the merits of brave men; and *Fenise* not being willing to neglect his good will, determined to stay there, and expect what it would please fortune to doe with him. In succession of time his capacitie got him so familiar an access to the Vice-Roy, that he had no affaire which the other had not particular knowledge of: so that he consulted with him of all things of importance. In the end to satisfie in some sort the obligation he had to him, he made him governour of the towne of *Tarente*

Fenise seeing himselfe honoured with this charge, made excuses of his insufficiency; yet he accepted it, for feare of offending the judgment of the Seigneur which had made choice of his prudence and fidelity. He departed by the commandement of the Vice-Roy to take possession of this administration in which he made appeare, that he perfectly understood politique things, to the great contentment of the honorable men of the towne, and glory of him that had installed him in this Government. He was accustomed to goe out almost every night, accompanied onely with two men, of whose valour and fidelitie he was assured, to the end to observe and chastice the lurkers, to whom the obscuritie seemed to give licence; one night entring into a street, making his ordinary round, he heard a doore shut a far off, and advancing that way, he perceived by a

house side, a representation of some thing which he could not discern by reason of the night, he approached with his company, and saw that it was a woman, almost all covered, with a great and rich loose garment, which hid her face: they would have discovered it but she resisted; and for to oblige her thereunto without violence, they told her that it was the governour of the towne that commanded her: then this unknowne person drew out a pistoll and presented it to the head of *Fenise* in drawing the trigger, but by good fortune for the Governour it went not off, at the same instant this woman let fall her pistoll and trussing up her garment turned her legs into wings and fled almost as fast as a bird could doe; one of these two men that accompanied *Fenise* ran after her, and the other conducted this too vigilant governour to his house; from thence he went to seeke the officers of Justice, to breake open this house and know who was therein lodged, to discover from whence came this attempt. They found there two women, the one faire and young, the other hideous and old, whom they tooke prisoners: this being done they followed him that was gone after her that would have killed the governour, wherein they used such diligence, that they led her with the others; as they beheld her more curiously with a candle, they knew that it was a man disguised like a woman, they left him there putting irons upon him, untill the next day. The day being come, *Fenise* was advertised of what had been done by his commandement, and knowing that the person that would have killed him was a man, he was extremely astonished. He went into the prison

son and made him be brought before him. It was a man of a good countenance and habited after the Spanish fashion. *Fenise* having beheld him, remembered himselfe, that he had before seene him, but it was a confused knowledg before he had asked him any question, the prisoner prayed him to be pleased that the company might withdraw, that he would tell him a businesse of importance, and which merited to be kept secret.

The assistants being retired, *Fenise* asked him what subject he had to attempt against his life, what he was, and if that he had heretofore seene him in *Spaine*. For your first demand answered the prisoner you may already be informed, that I had noe designe against your person; besides upon another occasion I have served you as a defendor, in a dangerous incounter. I am called *Marcell* that friend to *Leonard* which you found neere to *Valence*, and with whom you fought to the great hazard of your life. But to informe you the better of what you ought to know and what will serve to justifie me, I am obliged to make you a relation, if you please to give me audience. *Fenise* having let him know that he would willingly heare him, he thus continued.

THE HISTORY OF THE
TRAGIQUE LOVES OF
MARCEL.

IT this day just a yeare since I left my country
and five since I knew the cause of my travels, in a
woman more faire then rich, and more noble then
wise. It was upon the sea shore neere *Valence*, where I
first saw this beauty, and where I became her slave.
You shall dispence with me for telling you the
meanes I used to win her, for feare of troubling you,
& also because there is nothing rare therein, because
I found no great difficulty. At the first she affected
me, because I gave her presents; for it is long agoe
since liberalitie hath beene the mother of love: she
also would have given me all that she had; but I
would never receive any thing but the recompence
which my love merited. During the space of foure
yeares wee had two children; but as all things in
this world tyre us in the end, yea vices themselves,
I grew weary of her company, which distast had
more power over me then the pricks of my consci-
ence. I resolved to separate my self from her im-
pure and lascivious conversation, and for reasons
seemed to me very just, I attempted to perswade her
to consent to this designe: but she thereupon grew
in choler, and answered me, that I should take heed
what I did, and never hereafter hold her such dis-
course, for if I passed further, she would use such
extremities as should extremely scandalize all
that

that should be spectators thereof, yea, and those that should but heare them recounted. Oh if all the World could but heare the successe of this History, they would finde by experience in my person, how dangerous it is to persevere in unlawfull affections, and know to what excesses a woman corrupted doth abandon her self. I made no great matter of her threatnings, believing that in time she would be appeased, and agree to my propositions, so that I quit her from that time; but as I fled her, she followed me, yet she lost her paines. The ablest woman finds her self a foole when she is once hated, and reduced to sue to a man; the more she travails, the lesse she profits; the more she loves, the lesse she is beloved; the more she testifies her passion, the lesse she obligeth, and it may be renders her self more odious. Seeing then my neglects, or rather my disdaincs, and the little power her love had over me, she invented the most horrible cruelty that is possible for a humane heart to commit. She intreated me by a Letter to come see her at the least once, that she might resolve with more patience upon our divorce: I thought that I should have been too rigorous to have denied her this contentment; so that to satisfie her, I went one night to her, accompanied with two of my friends, who stayed for me at the door; I found her all alone in her chamber, with a look very desolate; she commanded her servant to retire, then she made me a studied discourse, where Art and Eloquence were so ingeniously joyned, that it would have shaken a constancy weaker then mine. In the end seeing that her endeavours were too weak, she arose

up and bad me good night; at the same time I took leave of her, and went down from her chamber; I was scarcely in the Court, when she appeared at the window of another chamber, and calling to me, set a torch in the window, holding a ponyard in one hand, and in the other one of the children I had by her, to the which she gave two stabs in the breast, and cast it at my feet upon the pavement. And as I begun to cry out, full of horror and amazement, seeing the action of this Fury, she took the other child and served it as she had done the first, saying that she would not keep the images of a faithlesse and ungratefull person. Alas! the cruell Tygresse had inticed them to her house by subtilty for this tragick end. I was at the charge to have them brought up in another place: I ran into the chamber again with my sword in my hand, but I found that she had shut the door. I set upon it to break it, and thereupon appeared an unknown man in armes, which she had hidden for to murder me; but at the noise we made, my friends came running in with a torch, and he seeing them approach, leapt out of a Balconia into the street for to save himself; my friends went down to follow him, and at the instant this intraged woman, all bloody, holding her ponyard in her hand, who thinking that I was taken by her catch-pole, came to serve him as Second, and plunge her dagger in my heart if she had been able; but my fury prevented her rage, and caused me to give her two great blowes with my sword, wherewith I cast her to the ground, where she immediately died. This being done, I went after my friends, and found that

that they had catched and mortally wounded the ir man, who demanded for confession: In approach- ing to them, I saw him fall to the ground, and at the same time we perceived another, who knocked at a door, which obliged us to a sudden retreat, and the next day to leave the Towne. At these words *Fenise* made reflection, and acknowledged that there are few murderers which are presently discovered; for he remembered himself that these were they that had fled for killing the man that fell dead before the door of *Leure*, when he knocked for to enter there the night that he had revenged himself of his treacherous friend *Don Jouan*.

These follies were the cause that I left my Coun- try continued *Marcell*. I took the way to *Barcelone*, where I stayed six moneths; from thence I came into this Realm of *Naples*, in a vessell full of men belonging to the Vice-Roy. Two daies after my imbarquement, I perceived a woman in this compa- ny, faire in perfection: I informed my self who she was, and I was told that one of the principall Gentlemen of the Vice-Roy conducted her, which obliged me to retaine my selfe, and hindred me from suing to her, for she begun to move my de- sires. We arrived happily at *Naples*, where this Gentleman hired a house, and then I begun to court her. During this time, she sent one night to seeke me, and told me that I could hope nothing from her if I did not carry her out of *Naples*; that she would chuse no place, but that I should carry her whither I would.

This proposition joyned to some other markes made me judge that she was of a changeable hu- mour;

mour; but forasmuch as my love regarded nothing but to be satisfied, I disposed my selfe to obey her in what she would wish; I stole her from *Naples* the same night that she had spoken to me thereof, and in all the Towns we passed I found none so fair as she: I hired a house, and furnished it with all things necessary for a Family; but whatsoever familiarity I had with her, I could not possibly obtain the last satisfaction of my desires, she put me off from day to day, and when I thought I was arrived at the term, she found inventions to prolong it anew, yet without making my passion exceed the limits of respect. It happened at that time that the Vice-Roy gave you the charge of Governour of this Town, which you execute so worthily, to his honour, and your own glory, and the generall satisfaction of all the people; and *Laure* having known your arrivall, and seen your person, (so this charming beauty is called) she told me, that if I would do her a signall service, and oblige her to accord to me the accomplishment of my desires, I must take away your life, telling me that she mortally hated you, because you had slain one of her Brothers, and that she should never be at rest untill she was revenged of you; this was without doubt the cause that moved her to leave *Naples*, having known that you was there. But I, who have alwaies had a certaine inclination to honour you, both seeing on one side that she would not consent to my wishes if I did not execute what she had ordained me, and also on the other side, that I could not enterprize nor commit so extreame a cowardise against your person, which I perfectly esteem and affect, we
thus

thus made our complot. That I should use all possible diligence to accomplish her revenge, untill I could discharge a pistoll upon you, and although you should not dye thereby, she should accord unto me what I demanded, since that I had done my duty to execute her will. She accepted this bargain upon condition that she might see the pistoll discharged, which was easie for her to doe, since that you passed very often by her street and windowes: our treaty being thus concluded, I disguised my selfe in a womans garment, and she saw me in her presence charge my pistoll with two good bullets, but in expecting you I drew out the two bullets, to the end that if it had taken fire, you might have received no dammage, those that took up the pistoll can verifie what I say. Seeing you enter into the street, I gave a certaine signe to give her advice thereof; at the instant I heard her open her window to see this tragick action, which she hoped for, and wherein she was deceived, since that it passed as you know. If this stratagem merit punishment, having been invented to enjoy a beauty passionately beloved, I deserve to be chastised with such punishment as you shall please to ordain, and therefore dispose of me as you please.

Since *Fenise* had heard the name of *Laure*, his Spirit was in perpetuall perplexity, knowing the extreame wickednesse of this woman, whom he had dearly loved, and resolving to revenge himself of her; to the purpose he praised the invention wherewith *Marcel* had abused her to save his life. He embraced him, and thanked him for the affection he had testified to him, and which he had rendred him

him in an occasion so dangerous, and in the same time he commanded that his irons should be taken away, saying that since there was none offended but himselfe, he would pardon himselfe withall his heart.

In the interim *Laure* who saw her selfe fall into *Fenise* his hands, would have enterprised a thousand times to have destroyed her selfe by poyson, Steele, or cord, if the old woman that was with her had not hindred her, telling her that she should not despaire, and that the evill could not be so great as she could not remedy. *Fenise* on the other side beat his braines how to invent how he might revenge himselfe of this cruell without noyse. He would not see her in her prison, for feare the violence of his anger should cause him to commit some publique excesse: a thing extreame ill in a governour and magistrate: but he resolved to convey her into some place where without witnesses he might examine her, & make her give account of her life. The better to accomplish his design, he delivered the old woman that accompanied her who seeing her selfe at liberty, gave new hopes to *Laure* to sollicite and obtaine her deliverance at what price so ever it should be. After having tryed all meanes possible, and seeing she advanced nothing, she addressed her selfe to a *Magician*, from whom she got a writing and a ring which she brought her assuring her, that if she tooke it from her finger when she found her selfe in any danger in speaking words containd in that paper which she gave her, she should surmount it. That she should not at all be afraid of what should be presented before her, that she

she should be assisted with succours more then humane, which should overcome the force of her adversary.

Fenise impatient to execute his revengfull project, made ingeniously to be reported amongst those that knew of the imprisonment of *Laure*; that having found her innocent by the depositions of the delivered prisoner and *Alcinoe* her companion, he would also oblige her with the same favour. For this effect he sent for her one night by a man he confided in, who told her that he had charge from the governour to conduct her to a towne four leagues from *Tarente*, where he was to leave her. She trusting in the charms which *Alcinoe* had given her, presently resolved to goe with this man. He set her upon his horse behinde him, and by night carried her to a *Rendez-vous* where *Fenise* was to meete him as he did, being there he commanded the conductor of *Laure* to leave him, and to returne to *Tarente*. *Laure* seeing her selfe thus abused; and abandoned to the mercy of *Fenise*, whom the passion of vengeance furiously inflamed, began to take off her enchanted ring, and speake the words which were given her. Vpon the instant before that *Fenise* could speake any word, he saw himselfe invironed with a whirlwinde and dust so thick that he could see nothing about him; presently he imagined that there was some magique in this accident: he armed himselfe with the signe of a christian, and incontinent, this obscuritie was changed into lightnesse; which neverthelesse frighted him more then the darkenesse, for he saw himselfe invironed with fire, whose flames seemed to mount unto the clouds, and
although

although he was in so terrible a danger he did not forbear to looke about where *Laure* was, but the he saw her no more, not knowing whether the flames had devoured her, or some divell had carryed her away in the whirlewinde and dust. In fine having stayed some time to consider this prodigious vision, from whence he knew not how to escape, he he heard a fearefull thunder in the ayre, and at the same instant the fire went out, and he found himselfe all alone without having suffered any hurt, but that of feare; heaven grew cleare and the moone very bright, which gave him meanes to finde his horse, he came on, he got on horse backe and returned to *Tarente*, his minde filled with a thousand confusions, as well with what he had seene, as the doubt he was in that the divells had carryed away *Laure*, to chastise her themselves, or if they were so much her friends, that they had ravished her to defend her from the effects of his vengeance. Being arrived at his house, he sent for *Marcel*, and told him all that had passed, whereupon they discoursed together some time; without being able to judge any thing certainly.

At that time *Marcel* tooke leave of *Fenise*, with a thousand faire complements and as many protestations of amitie made of one side and of the other. He returned to *Naples*, and *Fenise* stayed yet a yeare in his government. Then he received a letter from the Vice-Roy which obliged him to goe presently to him; and at his arrivall he gave him a paequet which he had received from *Don Ambrosio* his father, who finding himselfe old and feeble desired to see him yet once before he left this world. The Vice-Roy

Roy approving this paternall feeling and seeing the good nature of *Fenise* who was very willing to obey his father, permitted him to goe for *Spaine* upon condition he would returne as soon as he could possible; promising also of his part to render him at his returne more signall testimonies of the esteem he made of his merit. With this civill leave *Fenise* left *Naples* and went towards *Rome*, the town he desired to see before he returned into his country, judging that he might be accused of little curiositie to have left *Italy*, without seeing so marvailous a Citie.

From thence he went to *Florence*; and continuing his voyage, he arrived at the foot of the *Alpes*, where night tooke him farre from the place where he hoped to have lodged. And whether it was hee knew not the way, or that Fortune would yet play with him, he lost himselfe, if one may call that a losse, which caused him to obtaine the greatest treasure his spirit could have knowledge of. Besides the coming on of the night, he was accompanied with a violent tempest of thunder and lightning (which made him remember that wherein he was when he had designe to be revenged of *Laure*.) After which heaven poured downe such torrents of raine, which gliding downe the Mountaines, threatened our advenrerour to force him into the precipices. In the end, after having suffered much paine and apprehension, he saw himselfe (by the light of a flash of lightning) neare the mouth of a deep cave; he approached it, yet fearing by saving himselfe from one danger, to cast himselfe into a greater, imagining that this place under ground, was
the

the retreat of some Beares or Lyons ; he had no intention to enter therein, but onely so farre as to guard himselfe from the raine that fell from the clouds : but he had scarcely begunne to stay and take breath, when he perceived a light within the cave. Divers thoughts came into his minde, believing that he was falne into the hands of some Brigands, and after having consulted a little what he ought to doe, he resolved to try his fortune in this occasion ; he called two or three times, but there was nothing but the eccho of his voice which answered him. Then animating his resolution, he tied his horse to a bush, and approaching to the light, he saw extended upon the ground a humane person, having a face yellow, leane, and wasted ; in brieft, so hideous, that she seemed to be death it selfe. Her body was covered with a coat of haire-cloth, rude, and pricking, her haire was yellow, and so long, that it was able to cover her whole body, her hands dry, and without flesh, being crossed upon her breast, embracing a Crosse of a meane greatness, which leaned upon her mouth : finally, all her body was an originall of death, and a lively image of a sharpe pennance. Our Cavalier beheld this body with a great deale of pittie, and a great desire to have a more cleare knowledge thereof. When *Aurora* begunne to lend him her feeble light, the better to distinguish the particulars of this strange solitude, or rather this living Sepulcher, he saw upon a seate of the Rock, a bloody discipline, and a larumbell, under which were written these words, *Remember thy end* ; neare the Lampe, from whence proceeded the light he had seen, was a Crucifix

cifix, accompanied with the images of the Virgin, and Saint John the well-beloved Disciple, where these Letters were engraven, T. I. T. B. O. A. P. W. I. D. T. R. A. Fenise would have given them divers interpretations, but hee could not finde one that would come neare the signification of what he saw. After hee had a long time contemplated thesed objects, not daring to touch the body, for feare of prophaning it. He judged that since there was fire maintained by oyle, there must needs bee some one about this cave, that had care to furnish, and entertaine it with that element. He went out for to satisfie this desire, but he was scarcely out of the den, when the mouth thereof was suddainly shut by a great peece of stone which seemed to be miraculously false from the Rock for that purpose, as he went by little and little from this cave, by the same paces he came which were printed in the slimy earth, he perceived (the day being then begunne) a man of so strange a forme, that hee had doubted what creature he was, if his motion had not given him a more particular knowledge, having approached him, he saw an old man, tall, his hair white, and very long, his face leane, his beard reached unto his girdle, a patched coate that covered his body unto his knees, holding a Rozaire in one hand, and a little book in the other. Fenise called him, he lifted up his eyes (for yet he had not seen him) and stayed, astonished to see another man then himselfe, yet hee was not froward nor fled, but approached softly to Fenise, and informed himselfe by what adventure he was come into a place so farre from the highwayes, then he carried him into his Cell made be-

betwixt two Rockes, the doore whereof was so little, that with great difficultie could a man enter therein, without going upon his knees, there was a window made by nature, by which hee had so much light as was necessary, although he enjoyed almost none thereof; he made him sit downe upon his bed, which was a long stone made like a Tomb, and after many discourses, this good penitent to satisfie the desires of the Cavalier recited unto him this prodigious history.

THE HISTORY OF SOLITARY SIMEON.

ABout threescore yeares agoe, I was borne in the City of *Capoue*, issued of rich Parents, and at the same time a Magistrate of the towne of *Luques* had a sonne so like me, as if nature had formed us in the same mould, his face, hair, voice, proportion, and gesture, did so much resemble mine, or mine so paralell his, that it was wonderfull. In receiving Baptisme, I was called *Charles*, and my paralell *Albert*; we grew up during our tender age in equalitie of manners, and also of constellations, which disposed of our persons in such sort, that having attained the age of twenty yeares, we met at *Venice*, where we grew acquainted one with another, or rather with our selves. From this perfect resemblance, grew a strict amitie, which was never broken; we dwelt together, we had but one table, and one bed.

After a little time, there happened an affliction

to me, which obliged me to absent my selfe, my mother dyed in the middle of her youth, and quit this sad habitation to goe to heaven; I may so presume from her vertues and beauty; for there is no commendation so proper to expresse her worth, as to say she was faire, and also vertuous. *Albert* left *Venice* with me, and went to *Luques*. We conserved our affections by the means of Letters, which are the sweetest entertaines of absent friends; but we were not absent one from another; for *Albert* never looked in his glasse, nor I in mine, that hee saw not me, and I likewise him. I was twenty two yeares old, when my Father followed my Mother, leaving me his benediction for heritage, with some small temporall goods which he possessed; he charged me with the feare of God, Charitie towards the poore, and fidelitie to my friends, and principally towards *Albert*, and gave up the ghost, in giving me this wholesome counsell; he was laid in the Sepulcher of his ancient predecessors: I succeeded him in his possessions, which I enjoyed not long in quiet, the malice and envy of some of my kindred, so rigorously persecuted me, that I was forced to spend the greatest part of my goods in suites and pettifoggings, untill I was forced to leave my country. I left it to seekere repose elsewhere, and being followed with tenne men, which I treated as my friends, I went towards *Luques*, where I thought to finde my deare *Albert*, but he was gone to comfort me, having heard of the death of my father. This testimony of his affection made mee sweare npt to returne into my country untill I had found him, to give him thankses, and renew

our f^ored vows. He did the same having learned that I was gone to seeke him ; for it seemed our soules had consulted their designes together. In execution of this project, I visited many townes, where amongst others, I met with one of the ancient friends of my father, who having courteously received me, and kept me a long time at his house, he gave me his onely daughter in marriage called *Lesbie*, with a great portion. A yeare and a halfe after I had married her, I was told that *Albeir* was in *France*, in the Province now called *Gascoigne*, and that one might heare of him at *Bourdeaux*, or at *Tboloufe* : This news awakened the designe and desire I had to see him. I departed, accompanied with the same men that came with me from *Copoue*, and as we approached neare *Tboloufe*, wee met in a spacious field, near to the side of a wood, a little troope of men of equall number to ours, they stayed as soon as they had perceived us ; we believing they were theeves, whereof this country was full, and they having the same opinion of us ; our ignorance made us betake our selves to our armes, and came to the shock one against another, where there had been a bloody encounter, if God had not put himselfe into the middle. The greatest part of us, as well of the one side as of the other, had upon our heads (as they then commonly wore in *France*, and wherewith they serve themselves to this day) *Bocquincans* or *Tapabors*, which covers the most part of the face, so that we being mingled together, wee could scarcely know one another: then fearing some great disorder amongst my men, I discovered my face, and put my *Tapabor* upon my
shoulders

shoulders and under my chinne, to bee the better knowne to my friends, and immediately one of my adversaries came to me in a respectfull manner, *Seigneur Albert* sayd he, it would bee well for you to give the sign of retreate, that our party may separate themselves from our enemies, and that we may discern them, we shall bee thereby the stronger. At the same time hee heard the signe given wherof he spoke, and seeing that I was not *Albert*, as he believed, and that his companions being reunited, came to set upon us againe, he turned himselfe towards them, being already confused; What doe you meane by this Gentlemen, said he, are you mad or blinde, that you will needs offend our Chiefe? Doe you not see *Seigneur Albert*? At that name they all stayd, and I having heard him name *Albert* twice, I cryed out, peace, peace, friends, friends. Thereupon *Albert*, who heard my voice, abandoned his Tapabor, and his Sword, and came to cast himselfe about my neck, and I knowing him, we remained so fast locked together, that there had like to have come mischief thereby; for our horses who did not know one the other, beganne to rage one against the other, but our friends prevented it; for our joyes were so excessive, that we tooke no heed thereof, we lighted and entertained one another alone, with our most particular secrets; afterwards with extreame joy of both sides, we entered into *Tabouze*. I made a little stay with him, but the affection I bore to my wife obliged me to leave him, with promise to see him againe very shortly. *Albert* habited himselfe after the French fashion, to justify the esteeme he had of that nation, which

gave him access into the house of a great Lord of that Realme, which bore the title of a Duke, and who ordinarily dwelt at *Tbolonse*, the eminent qualities of *Albert*, who was expert in all exercises fit for a Gentleman, besides his wit and sweet disposition (which made him welcome into all companies whatsoever) got so great familiaritie with this Duke, that after he knew his wit, hee would have him alwaies in his company, and at his table. He had a daughter perfectly faire, as well of body as mind: And as the conversation with Ladies is much more free in *France* then in *Italy*, *Albert* had the honour to be often in her company with other companions, where they reciprocally knew one anothers merits, in such manner that within a little time they thought well one of another. *Albert* was willing to take the occasion which seemed to invite him to a good fortune, he begun to court this young Lady, and testified to her that he had vowed his liberty to her service, sometimes by Letters, sometimes by verses, which he recited in singing and playing upon the Lute in the very presence of her Father; for amongst the other fair parts where-with he was accomplished, he possessed these two graces from the Muses of Poetry and Musick, to which I also took pleasure to addict my self, to the end that our likenesse might be the more perfect. In the end he explicated himself so intelligibly, and played his part so well, that he insinuated himself into her favour, so far as she permitted him one night to come see her in her chamber. A great impudence in a Maid of such condition, which ought to be so much the more carefull to keep her self, ha-
ving

ving more to lose then one of lesse quality; but there is no retinue nor limits to a woman that suffers herself to be blinded with that foolish passion. There was in this Dukes Court a certain Gasconian Cavalier, called *Arnals*, which had obtained *Alberts* affection, and the place of confident which he before had, and knew so well how to play his part, that he got out of *Alberts* heart all his secrets, whose freedom presumed he would never betray him; but it happened to him as it doth ordinarily to those who discover themselves too freely unto others whom they have not proved. *Albert* did not only content himself to declare unto him his affections, but he made use of him as a Scout, when he went to receive the greatest favours from *Matilda* (so was the Dukes daughter called) thus was he punished by this confident, so injudiciously chosen. This perfidious friend, envious of *Alberts* contentment, excited by the inclination he had to doe mischief, and to publish the secrets which were revealed unto him, being one day neare the Duke, who praised the merits of *Albert*, audaciously interrupted him, saying, that he was sorry his bounty should be so abused by a treacherous stranger, which violated the honour of his Linage, and who by his pernicious cunning had abused his daughter *Matilda*. The Duke, who held *Albert* for a vertuous Gentleman, & his daughter to be too wise and retained to fall into such an inconvenience, and on the other side considering *Arnals* reputation, from whom every one fled as from a wicked spirit, told him he was rash and insolent, to use such impudent language; thereupon *Albert* arrived, to whom the Duke told this prodigious

gious accusation of *Arnalt*, wherewith he was extremely surprised. Yet without testifying exteriourly the motion of his heart, he answered to the Duke, that he should think he did wrong to the esteem and honour which he had testified to him, if he should go about to excuse the crime wherewith this traitor accused him, but that if he pleased to permit him to have satisfaction from him, his innocence should be known, to the confusion of his accuser. The Duke seeing *Albert* speak with so much resolution, answered him, that he never believed it, and that the offence was his: But that since he took part in the injury, and would take vengeance for it, he praised his generosity, and granted him the combate for the next day. Immediately after that *Albert* had obtained this permission, and that he was retired to prepare himself for the duell, I arrived at *Tbolowse*, and sent to let him know thereof; he came to me, and after our reciprocall embracements, he told me the trouble wherein traytor *Arnalt* had ingaged him, and that he did a little doubt of the successe, not for want of valour, but because the truth was not of his side, so he was to fight against double armes. Having heard all these circumstances, my heart was seized with extream sadnesse, considering that his sensuality had caused him to stain the House of this Seigneur with so great infamy. I would willingly have shewn him his fault, but when things are passed, they are without remedy. In conclusion, after having long time reasoned and consulted together, I found no course so expedient as that I should undertake the combate for him, and convert the verity
which

which *Arnalt* maintained into a lye, justifying that I had never violated the honour of *Matilda*, and that by force of Armes. But *Albert* too courageous, and who felt his conscience charged with this crime, would never permit me to expose my life for his expiation: We contested some time thereupon, but seeing that I could not make him condescend to my proposition, I bethought myself of another course, and counselled him to perswade his enemy to take a second; but he answered me as he had before done, that he would not engage others innocency with his sinne, that he was resolved to hazard his fortune alone; that he would put himself in good state before he entred the Lists, and would aske God pardon for his crime; and if it pleased him to give him the Victory over the traytor, in whom he had too lightly confided, he would content himself in making him ask his life; and at the worst of the ill chance fell upon him, he hoped that his blood would wash away his iniquity, and that he should dye with extream repentance for having don so infamous an injury to a Seigneur that dearly loved him, and to whom he was so behold-ing. In saying this, he left me, and went to the place assigned, with tears in mine eyes, and sorrow in my heart, seeing him goe to maintain so ill a quarrell. Two houres after I heard the publick rumour of the successe of this combate, where I learned that the two enemies had no advantage the one over the other, since that either of them had by his death received the just punishment of his offence; *Arnalt* of his treason, and *Albert* for violating the virginity of *Matilda*; they pierced

one an others bodyes with their lances, and fel upon the place, where they expired almost at the same instant to the great astonishment of the spectators. You may better imagine the displeasure which seised my heart, then I can represent it unto you by words, I will onely tell you that I was so sensible thereof that I fell sick, which hindred me from rendering him the last honours which we owe to our friends, and that I should have rendered to him as to the halfe of my selfe, But as one misfortune serves ordinarily for Harbinger to another, being recovered and returned to my house, I found it altogether desolate and in disorder by the decease of her who was the joy of my familie. At my arrivall I wanted not much of committing some outrage upon my person, through despaire, seeing my selfe deprived of two such pretious things, as I had not the like in the world, my friend and wife. I had a sonne by her, who hindred me from this fury: after I had constituted him heire and universall possessor of the estate fortune had given me, and not being willing to survive after the death of *Albert* and *Lesbie*; I resolved to enterre my selfe alive in this desert, where I have made my retreat this twenty yeares, enjoying most sweet repose, and proving all the felicities that I have heretofore heard or read of solitude. Since which time I have alwaies lived alone, but about a yeare agoe, going amongst the rocks to search hearbes and rootes to sustaine this poore life, when the night begun to banish the light, I perceived amongst the broome a person whose feeble and plaintive voice invited me to succour her. I presently advanced and saw a woman of good fashion who as
soone

soone as she had perceived me, asked me if I was not called *Simeon*, for inchanging my life and manners, I also changed my name. Yes said I in approaching to her, for my age being deprived of feelings of sensuality, and where concupiscentiall heats were extinct, permitted me to come to her, with out any scruple, and to bring her where we now are: and then demanding of her what she was, she made me this discourse

I am a poore unfortunate and unhappy sinner, whose life heaven hath conserved to oblige me to dispose of it in these deserts. I was borne at *Toledo* in *Spaine*, where I was called *Laure*. It would be too troublesome and offensive to your holinesse to declare to you the particulars how I have spent my young yeares, I shall onely tell you, that I have run divers hazards in flying from the terrour that I had of a Cavalier who was offended with me, as in effect he had cause. Thinking to shun the danger which I feared, I cast my selfe therein. It is but foure dayes agoe since I was in the presence of the Cavalier, in quality of Judg, for a crime which I had committed, having attempted to make him be treacherously slaine. His countenance made me apprehend his rigour, his feeling my punishment, and his injury his vengeance. Then esteeming it impossible to satisfie him by my submissions; I had recourse to an Inchantresse, to deliver me out of his hands, thinking it impossible to escape by any other meanes. This Cavalier having caused me to be brought into his company in a secret place, for to tak away my life with this proper hands, I served my selfe with the charmes which the Inchantresse had given me,

which

which made me see feareful things, & without knowing whichway I went, whether by earth, aire or the sea I found my selfe in *Florence*. But although I saw my selfe free from him that threatened me, I was nevertheless a slave to my proper conscience which tortured me without ceasing. I made a general confession & from that howre, I found my selfe touched with a holy repentance of my faults, and with an acknowledgment of my proper miseries. Desiring then to vow the rest of my dayes to God, by the meanes of a severe penance, I have renounced the world and all the vanities thereof, and I doe not know by what instinct I have beene conducted, into this sharpe and remote place, where I desire to imprison my body to deliver my soule, which I feare is in great danger to be destined to the prisons of perpetuall darknesse. In finishing this last word, sobs and teares came into her mouth and eyes, in so great abundance that it was impossible for her to speake more. I was astonished to see so great contrition, in so young a heart, and an election of a life so different from that I imagined she had before lead. My good friend said I to her, your proposition is very wholesome, but I feare your delicatenesse and the ordinary inconstancy of your sex will hinder you from the execution thereof. At the least having begun you will finde this change too rigorous to support. Yet if you have a good courage, God will fortifie you, and by little and little you will have cause to give him thanks, for the holy inspirations he hath given you. Alas my daughter, a soule is happy that is disposed for death before she is called to it / It is the generall port of all humanes,
but

but many have there suffered shipwrack for want of the guide which leadeth to safety, which is called pennance. If you then will save your selfe, and march under his conduct: I offer you all that you shal judge I can contribute to this designe, hoping by the grace & assistance of God that you will attaine life everlasting. She answered me that since I would use so much charitie towards her, she would be governed by my counsell, and would resigne me all her will. After which she chose that dwelling, which you say you have seene, where she leads an Angelicall life. I could tell you the particulars thereof, but worldly persons as you are, take no great pleasure in such entertaines, and also that person being but indifferent to you, it would be but a trouble to you. You shall onely know that three dayes since, she rendered her soul to God, which I believe he hath received to recompence the sharpe pennance which she hath undergone. She hath left me here envious of her vertues, happy if I can well imitate them. But I being with her when she expired; I have graven thirteene letters which you saw in the stone, for it was not spacious enough to put more, they signifie according to my sence; *This is the body of a Phenix which is dead to rise againe.*

For as much as the death of just persons is not called their death but birth; for as the humane creature in his birth leaveth the sensible habitation of his mothers wombe, to come and live abroad; so the soules of them which leave this world in the grace of God, leave the corruptible prisons of their bodies, to enjoy eternall felicitie. Sir I have made you this troublesome discourse, as well to satisfie your desire as to recreate my memory with things
past

past ; for you know it is a singular pleasure to old people to recount the adventures of their youthes.

Since that venerable *Simeon* had pronounced the name of *Laure*, *Fenise* had much to doe to forbear breaking the thread of his discourse, to let him know how much he was interess'd in this history. He sigh'd at every word *Simeon* stay'd, & complain'd of his hard fortune, having so passionately loved this maid by whom he had been so ingratfully used. But in the end considering that God had called her to him by this salutary penance, he was extreamly sorry he had not knowne her in this cell, to have rendered her his last honours, in bedewing her feete with his teares, and asking her pardon (for the designe which he had to kill her, and by that meanes deprive her of the saving of her soule.

When *Simeon* left speaking, *Fenise* begun to weep, and for to explicate from whence proceeded this tenderneffe, he told him the extraction of *Laure*, and the course of her life untill the time she had retired her selfe into that solitude, at which the solitary much wondred. Our Cavalier desiring to continue his voyage, thanked *Simeon* for the entertainment he had given him ; he prayed him to guide him to the foote of the rock where the cave was, that served for tombe to this happy penitent, to take againe his horse which he had left there, to the which the good man accorded, and more, conducted him into a foote way which led him into his way where having imbraced and taken their last leaves, *Simeon* hastily returned into his Cell repenting that he had imployed too much time in discoursing upon worldly vanities.

The end of the second Booke

THE



THE
THIRD BOOK
OF
FENISE.



He that is once embarked upon the Sea, and arrives happily to Shoare, is much bounden to his fortune; and he confideth in her too much, that putteth himsele a second time upon that fearefull element. For my part, I thinke there is no greater prooffe of courage, then to enterprise to passe a Gulf without necessity, or without being thereunto incited by covetousnesse. Fortune bears soveraign sway over foure things, which are, Marriages, great Mens Favourites, Warres, and Navigations. But according to the opinion of many, the last is the most perillous : And from thence I draw this consequence, That if courage bee so necessary for the Warre,

War, as being a perill much to be feared ; the same courage is yet more requisite in Navigation ; forasmuch as the danger there is altogether evident, having but the thicknesse of a planke betwixt life and death. An author of reputation reporteth, that a certaine Consul of *Rome*, durst never hazard himselfe upon the sea, and being demanded from whence proceeded this feare, hee answered, The vessell is a foole, since that she is alwaies in motion, the Navigator is a foole, being never of the same opinion, the sea is a foole since that she is never in repose, and the aire is a foole, since that it runneth perpetually : And supposing that all these things are true, and that being upon the earth we fly from a foole, why would you have me trust my life amongst foure fooles, being upon the sea ? This argument deserveth to be known, but not imitated ; for if the Consul is esteemed prudent, he may also be accused of cowardlines.

Our Cavalier was not of the sect of this Philosopher, nor of his opinion, the desire hee had to advance in his journey, made him resolve to imbarque himselfe at the port of *Lixour*, and againe trust his life to *Neptune*, hee there found a French Merchants ship, where he was welcome, and civilly lodged ; for although it be hard to be so upon the sea, yet money findeth all commodities. *Fenise* was then well enough furnished therewith, as well by the liberalitie of the Vice-Roy of *Naples*, as the lawfull gaine he had made of the government of *Tarame*. And the opinion which those of the ship had that he was rich, obliged them to beare him a certaine respect, as he gave them cause, for having
layd

layd in good floore of provision in the vessell, hee parted it liberally amongst the company, by which meanes he gained the hearts and affections of the Mariners and Patrons. All those in the vessell being familiar together, endeavoured to passe the troubles of navigation with the sweet witty diversifements they could devise. The Merchants were men of subtile understanding, and besides there were in this company two young Italians, good humanists, and well knowing in the Lawes, with whom *Fenise* grew familiar, finding their conversations very pleasant. Every one wakened his wit to finde matter to entertaine himafelfe. One amongst them propounded, that he would maintain that *Denis* the Tyrant of *Sicily* was the most humane and courteous of all the Gentils of his time; another, that he would maintaine, that there was neither ingratitude nor ingratifull men in the world, and *Fenise* offered to answer to all the problems and questions the others could make him. The two Italians begunne to discourse upon the subjects propounded, where they brought such apparent and wel-grounded reasons, that although they were sophisticall and false, they were capable to perswade those who did not truly understand them, but they used them rather to shew the subtility of their wits, then to have them believed. After they invited *Fenise* to satisfie them in what he had promised; and as he was going to make them admire those faire curiosities he had reaped by reading, the Pilot stayed him, in crying to the Saylor, that they should fold up the sayles; for they should immediately have a great storme. At this

this fearfull advertisement every one quit the attention of these prophane discourses, and begonne to looke to his conscience, and to be troubled with the apprehension of shipwrack. They entered into the Gulfe of *Leon*, when Heaven begun to be troubled with a double obscuritie, that of the night, and that of the storme, wherein the windes were so violent, that they seemed to move the sea unto the very bottome. In a little time the tempest became so furious, that all in the ship were fearefull; every one cryed out with a good heart for divine assistance, and demanded pardon for his faults. The Mariners themselves were so amazed, that they knew not their compasse, nor what to doe or command, the cords, masts, and sailes were broken one from another; sometimes the waves lifted up the ship to the clouds, and then again cast it down into the most profound deeps: It thundered and hailed, and the aire produced lightning, which served them but for to see things fearfull. In the end, after having suffered a long storme, a wave cast them against a Rock, where the ship was split, and then some were buried quick in the waves, and others ranne to the last remedy of Shipwrack, endeavouring to prolong their lives as long as they could, floating upon tables and packs: *Fenise* seized upon a square chest, wherein was his equipage, and so abandoned himselfe to divine mercie, and to the misericord of the waves. Heaven favourable to his vowes, would not let him serve for food to the sea Monsters, but had care to conduct him; for after having felt all the evils that feare could cause, about break of day, he saw himselfe neare to shoare, which

which yet he could not come to, because the wave^s seemed to sport with him, sometimes they made him almost to touch the land, and then cast him much further off then he was before: In the end, having againe invoked divine assistance, the necessity wherein he was taught him to make use of his armes in stead of oares, he employed the last vigour of his courage, and tooke port betwixt two Rocks, kissing the ground, and giving God thanks for the miracle he had done in delivering him, and from this instant he accounted himselfe a second time borne into the world. The sea grew calme, and the day by little and little grew light, and let him see the pittifull reliëts of the Ship, and the spoiles of his companions, which floated upon the waters. He looked about him of all sides to see if he could perceive the top of some Towre, or Steeple of some Towne or Village, that he might go thither to demand some sustenance, but he saw nothing that could give him any hope of relief; he had wherewithall to recompence those that should assist him; for in this extreame misfortune he had resting a good summe of money, which he had in gold about him and in his coffer, but at this time it was unserviceable unto him. After he had consulted what he ought to doe, he left the sea shore, sometimes turning back, as well to lament his companions who were drown'd, as for fear the sea should yet follow him to make him suffer the same shipwrack; hee advanced into a field, not knowing whither he went, nor in what land he was; he heard, in approaching to a grove, a man lamenting, which spoke Spanish; then joyglided into his
L heart,

heart, thinking that he was arrived upon the coast of *Spaine*, and coming neare him by little and little, he heard him speake these words, Oh great God! the onely recourse of afflicted soules, hast thou resolved to abandon me, amongst these barbarians for to finish here my daies, without enjoying that dear consolation administred unto those who are born under the knowledge of thy Lawes, and the true Religion? Lord thy will be done, if it bee thy pleasure, I must resolve to suffer it. Ending these last words, he gave a great sigh, and held his peace, because he had perceived our unfortunate Cavalier. *Fenise*, who at first imagined himselfe to be in *Spaine* his owne country, now learning the contrary by these words, converted his joy into sadnesse, presuming that he was upon the coast of *Barbary*; he approached to him that complained, and thus saluted him; My friend, if you finde alleadgement to your troubles, in complaining to these trees, do not leave to continue, behold here another infortunate, which may keep you company, and helpe you to weep, if you please, since that it seems by your language that we are of the same country: For me I am a Spaniard and native of *Madrid*. Oh God, answered the other, who was a venerable old man, a strange encounter! And in embracing him with teares in his eyes; what misfortune, continued he, or what divine power is it that hath conducted you hither? Then *Fenise* asked him in what countrey hee was, and then told him of his Shipwrack, the most succinctly that hee could; for he was so weak that he could scarcely speak. After he prayed him to give him something

to eat, and presently *Fredrike*, so was this old man called, prayed *Fenise* to expect him amongst the trees, and went in diligence to fetch him bread and drinke made of Lemmons and Sugar, where-with *Fenise* refreshed himself. Having thus taken acquaintance one of the other, our Cavalier prayed *Fredric* to tell him by what accident he came there, and was obliged to passe the rest of his life in that barbarous region, as his complaints had let him understand. The old man desiring to satisfie the curiositie of *Fenise*, made him this discourse.

THE HISTORY OF FREDERICK.

THE illustrious towne where the Court of *Spaine* is ordinarily kept, is the place where I saw my first day, as well as you, if you be of *Madrid*, as you say; I am of noble lineage; yet I never saw my father, he being taken from me by a dangerous sickness before I could have knowledge of him. He left me his onely heire and under the conduct of a mother, who neglected too much to keep in my youth, to which my riches gave mee more libertie than was reasonable. Amongst these liberties I made such debauches, as I will not recount unto you; having been so excessive, that to compare that time with the life I lead now, I have cause to esteeme my selfe happy, although I am farre from it, and besides it would augment your wearinesse by a

L 2

trouble-

troublesome attention. In this age my heart begun to be warmed by love, by the perfections of a Gentlewoman of a great family, whose carriage was civility it ielse, and whose beauty was the object which made all admire its author. It would be superfluous to tell you the arts, inventions, and subtilties I used to declare unto her my passion, and the paines I tooke to finde a favourable occasion to perswade her to compassionate my torments; you may imagine them in representing unto your self that she was the most recluse of her time. You shall only know, that whatsoever services or testimonies of fidelity I could render her for the space of two years, it was impossible for me to hear one word from her mouth, to obtaine one favour from her hands, or to perceive any hopefull signe. In the end she was overcome by my perseverance, and not by her negligence; but who could resist so long a pursuit without being an insensible rock? the strongest places and Towers inaccessible, have been gained rather by industry then valour: *Troy*, *Numance*, and *Carthage*, serve us for examples thereof; what marvaile was it then that adorable *Perfinde* could alwayes resist against the art, force, and courage wherewith I daily assaulted her? She was under the guard of a Mother, the most sharp and austere woman that was in all *Madrid*: *Perfinde* feared so much, that she never looked upon her without trembling. Neverthelesse by succession of time, and increasing of obstacles, our loves grew so great, that I obtained what I desired. I saw *Perfinde* in her chamber by the intermission of certain women her Governours, who often betray the honours of Maids,

Maids, in making shew to defend them. In one word, our private meetings were so familiar, that within a few dayes *Perfinde* possessed a living gage of our affections. Love, that had made her commit this fault, inspired her with industry to hide it, and means to remedy it when it should be time. She approached her term, when her Father had a fancy to send her to *Toledo* to see one of her Cousins which she had there, and to recreate her self with the famous sports which the Citizens then made. *Perfinde* discovered to her her secret as to her most confident friend, and after that, *Agarise* (so was her Cousin called) had testified the displeasure she had for this accident; She promised to assist her in all she could possible to avoid the scandall; the season being come of reaping that fruit into her hands, which had taken maturity in her womb, *Agarise* writ to the Father and Mother of *Perfinde*, praying them to be pleased that she might yet keep her Cousin with her, and that her leave might be prolonged for some time, which they easily granted. I rendred my self Burgois of *Toledo* the day of her arrivall, to the end to serve her, and contribute all that should depend upon me to her assistance when there should be occasion; and for this cause I saw her almost every night in the presence of her Cousin. But one day, when *Perfinde* begun to be set upon with ordinary paines, her Cousin and she determined to leave the Town, and go to the Farms neer *Toledo*, which are called *Cigarales*, where *Agarise* had acquainted a woman with this affaire, who was prepared to receive them when they should come. But they were scarcely got half way wher,

violent paine seized poor *Persinde*. Then *Agarise* feigning another pressing necessity, left the Coach with her, and retiring themselves amongst some bushes which were happily there, *Persinde* was delivered of a Sonne, they wrapped him in linnens, and covered him with a little mantle of silke and gold which they had brought for that purpose, rather taking care to make hast, then to trim up the Infant. This being done, *Persinde* drew out of her pocket a paper, and having diligently blotted out all that was written therein, shewrit these few words.

Christian, this Infant demands Baptisme, have a care thereof, and let him be called Louis. She hung this note about his neck with a silk ribband, and abandoned him to celestially mercy: They returned speedily to their Coach, and without going further, returned to *Toledo*, feigning that *Persinde* was sick by the way: There was a great space of time betwixt their return and the houre I was accustomed to visit them, which was the cause of a misfortune, which maketh me yet sigh. The night being come, I went to make mine ordinary visit, where I learned this newes, and the place where I should finde this poor little innocent. I departed in diligence, and sought on all sides with a torch; I visited the inside and outside of every bush that was in the place whither they had directed me, but without finding any thing. Feare seized my soule at the beginning, fearing that he was devoured by some wild beast, and yet seeing no blood spilt, nor any of the cloaths of the child, I imagined that some charitable person, having heard it
cry

cry, had taken it away to give it a better lodging. After I had passed almost the whole night in visiting three or four times the same place, to the end I might not be accused of negligence, I returned to *Toledo*, with intention to report otherwise to *Perfide*, for fear of killing her with grief. The time of my going to see her being come, I made her believe that I had put the infant in a place of security, and that she needed not further thinke thereof. Not long after, *Perfide* having recovered her colour, returned to *Madrid*, with letters from *Agarise* her Cousin, which thanked her Uncle and Aunt for the honour she had received from them in the visit of her Cousin, let them know that she had been a little sick, so that all this affaire was happily overpassed, if the absence of the child had not afflicted us.

My Mother deceased incontinently after this success, and by her losse I remained in full liberty to march where I thought good. I then determined to demand *Perfide* in marriage; but having acquainted her therewith, she counsell'd me not to do it, for fear I should thereby receive some discontentment, seeing that her Mother pretended to make her religious: And although she knew not that *Perfides* inclination stood that way, yet she used all possible diligence to make her condescend to her will. A great tyranny, to make a person by constraint take a condition against heart.

Having had certain advice of the intention of this rigorous mother, and being assured of the affections of *Perfide*, I stole her away one night, an

carried her to *Cartagene*, a towne situate upon the sea shore, and where the greatest part of my estate was, I stayed with her there some yeares, we leading a very happy life. Heaven gave me another child, which was a daughter faire as an Angell, she had all the features of her mother, but yet more sweet and charming, I loved her above all things in the world, I could not be a moment without seeing her, and nothing pleased me so much as her innocence. She was about three yeares old when on a summers evening I had a great desire to walke with her in a little place which I had neere the towne of *Cartagene*, and stay there untill the next day at the same houre; but I departed too late, for the night tooke me by the way. I held this little minion in mine armes, having taken her from her nurse which carryed her, and without thinking thereof I was invironed with a troope of pyrates, who tooke her with my heart out of mine armes, presently I found my selfe in a vessell companion to many slaves, deprived of my deere child and servants who were with me, and presently after I found my selfe a captive in *Algier* which you see now. Consider in what port you are arrived, and whether you had not better to have served for food to sea monsters, then to have falne into the hands of these earthly ones. I have languished fourteene yeares in this misery, where it seemes my life hath taken another nature, since that I dye not to avoid so many displeasures. I have many times written to *Madrid*, and sent my wife worde of my sad disaster, but what ever diligence I have used, I could never receive an answer. I doe not excuse her of negligence, nor ill nature, I have

too much prooffe of her goodneffe and vertue, but I thinke my letters never went fo far, I feare that the King of *Algier*, who will not put my daughter nor me in the number of flaves to be ransomed, hath stayed them, for thefe infidells are moft faithfull to their foveraigne; fo that I know not now if I have yet any body for me, nor whether my wife be in heaven or earth.

My daughter I have told you of, is called *Magdene*; but the barbarian that ravished her from me, hath taken from her that name, and called her *Carife*, at the end of fix yeares of our captivitie, the pirate seeing day by day the beauty of this little one increafe, made her ferve him as an instrument to get the favour of *Selin*, King of *Algier*, he gave her to him to difpofe of her as he thought good. The Prince was much pleafed with this prefent, and to teftifie the efteeme he had thereof, he promifed to gratifie him upon all occafions; when fhe was taken out of mine armes her clothes were not fo poore, but that they rendered her confiderable, and teftified that fhe was iffued from chriftians of great qualitie, which obliged the King to efteeme her as much as if fhe had beene his proper child. He hath brought her up like a queene, in effect I know he pretends to qualifie her with that greatneffe and marry her. I apprehend, that that will be executed fooner then is thought of, and fo there may be a foule loft, and a defolation for mine old age.

The onely good that I have refting amongst fo many difpleafures, is that I fee her fometimes, by a window of a Towre, where by good fortune, the King hath lodged her, the halfe of the circumference

rence of this towre comes from the Kings lodgings against the gardens of the Citizens; having betwixt them but a little lane of five or six paces over, full of briars and bushes. With diligent searching some meanes to approach this prison, I have found a breach in a wall, which seemeth to have beene made for me by some angell: by it I goe to the foote of the tower, and hiding my selfe in the thornes and grasse, I speake sometimes to *Magdalene*, whilst she maketh a shew to recreate her selfe in taking the ayre by the window, and by the view of the gardens; In the little time we enjoy this common contentment, I speake to her of no other thing, but that she remember she is a christian, that she take heede of violating her faith, whatsoever is offered her or said to her, and that she hope that God who never leaveth his, will receive our vowes, and one day give us the recompence of our travells and constancie. See deere country man the subject of my afflictions and miserie, which you may helpe me to lament as you told me at your arrivall, if peradventure you have not particulars, which oblige you to imploy your teares for your selfe; and if it was nothing but the losse you have made of your libertie, you will not want cause of teares Alas! there is so long a death prepared for you amongst chaines and travells, that I assure my selfe that you will be sorry you were not buried in the waters as your companions, which I esteeme much happier then your self. Hitherto *Fenise* had harkened to the afflictions of others, but from that moment he begun to feare those that threatened him: but when the courage is firme, there is no adversitie that can astonish a man,
nor

nor danger capable to terrifie him. *Fenise* having a while considered the sinistre predictions of *Frederick*, and studied by what industry he might prevent these future disgraces, he made him this discourse. In harkening to the recitall you have made me of your misfortunes, I have conceived in my minde what may remedy you, and it may be you will judg so, when I have communicated it unto you. But to oblige you the more to second my intentions, I will tell you newes of the child you went to search amongst the bushes neere *Toledo*. He was named *Louis* as his mother desired, I have not onely knowne him, but that knowledge is passed into an affection, he is one of my intimate friends. I have left him at *Valence* at a gentlemans house a friend of mine, called *Leonard*, in whose house he hath recounted to me his whole life, whose beginning answers to all the particulars you have told me thereof. A labourer found him in the place where you went to seek him, he had care to bring him up, and entertaine him untill his decease; and in making him inheritor of all his estate, he gave him a little purse, wherein was the paper that you saw his mother hung about his neck, which he yet carefully keepeth. So great a transport of joy seized the heart of *Frederick*, that he wanted not much of falling at the feet of *Fenise*, when when he told this newes: But after a little silence, it is possible said he, that my stars begin to be weary with persecuting me, what will heaven give me this contentment in my last dayes and assure me that my child liveth? Alas! if I could perswade my selfe as you say, I should no longer esteeme my selfe unhappy, although I be a slave and charged with chaines. Yet you give me so many markes thereof
and

and your manner of speaking hath so much appearance of truth, that I willingly believe it. For that which concerneth the proposition you make to execute a designe which may produce some happy successe; doe not doubt my fidelity; I ingage to you my faith to expose my selfe to all sortes of hazards, to serve you untill the losse of my life if there be neede, assuring my selfe, that before any thing is undertaken you will judge that it is all that a slave can offer. Doe not believe answered *Fenise*, that I make so little esteeme thereof, as onely to hazard it; on the contrary the industry I have advised my selfe of, tends onely to its conservation and safety. I can speake the *Arabick* language in perfection, having learned it of a slave of my fathers, by a secret providence of heaven, who foresaw this present necessitie. With that I have some money which is saved with me from the passed shipwrack. I put it into my bosome when I entered into the ship at *Livorne*. My designe is, to buy by your meanes a turkish habit, and cloth my selfe therein: I will say that I am Citizen of *Fez*, and will buy you of your master; when you shall be out of your captivitie you shall also change your clothes, and by the favour of the *Arabique* language, wee will save our selves as well as we can possibly. By this meanes you shall be delivered from the miseries wherein you are, you will give a new life to your wife, and see him for whom you both have shed so many tears. I believe answered *Frederick*, that heaven hath expressely preserved you from shipwrack, to deliver me from the miseries wherein I am, this encounter could not have beene without the soveraigne appointment of God. There
are

are many circumstances which may helpe the execution of your project: this day they solemnize the nativity of my master, who is a *Bacba*, the second person after the King, and his favourite; and because of this feast, wee slaves have more libertie then upon other dayes, every one maketh holiday, and is at rest, therefore you have found me here aside complaining my disaster, besides because I belong to this seignieur; wee have a little more priviledge then other captives, the guards that are at the gates take not so much heede of us, so that all these things being considered I hope to satisfie you in what you desire to our common contentment. *Fenise* at the same time gave him as much money as was necessary for that purpose, & in the meane while he remained hidden in an old great hollow oake, which it seemed yeares had prepared for this act of hospitalitie. *Frederick* was not long in returning with such habits as he judged most proper for their designe, being discharged of his packet, *Fenise* told him that he had left a box upon the sea shore, wherein was a part of his equipage, and upon the which he had saved himselfe, and having consulted together what was to be done, they went to seeke it, bringing it with much paine, and burying it in a remarkable place, to have recourse to it if there should be occasion. Then without losing time *Fenise* tooke the turbant and other Turkish habits, put a Cimiter by his side, and disguised himselfe so properly, that the most subtill *Turk* would have taken him for his naturall countryman. The same day a Merchante ship a Jew landed at *Algier* laden with great riches, as Velvets, Scarlets, Spanish clothes, and other rare merchandizes

Merchandises of *Tire* and *Caire*, whither they make great traffique, this happened well for *Fenise*; for at the houre that it arrived, which was towards the evening, he and *Frederick* approached near the gates of the Town, and our Cavalier mingled himself amongst the new comers, and was taken by the Citizens for a Merchant, and by the Merchants for one of the towne, so that he entred freely without any one taking notice of him. *Frederick* served him for guide and Harbinger, finding him lodging for his mony where *Fredrick* left him, having before resolved together, that *Fenise* should goe the next day to his Master to treat about his ransome.

Fenise slept but very little that night, his minde was busied with a thousand severall thoughts, one while he considered the danger which he had run and from which he had been saved, to fall into the hands of Barbarians; another while he thought upon the discourse *Frederick* had made him, imagining that his daughter must needs be rarely faire, since that the King of *Algier* pretended to marry her, and as he occupied his spirit in this entertaine, he grew extreamly desirous to see this beauty when he should have delivered the father: The day being come, he informed himselfe where the *Bacha's* house was, where *Frederick* was slave, he was conducted thither, and being arrived at the gate, he courteously demanded to speake to him, saying he would buy one of his slaves. He was brought before the *Bacha*, and when they were face to face, they were both mute, and without motion as statues. *Fenise* knew that this was his fathers slave which had taught him the Arabique Language, which was called

called *Mabomet Zeran*, and respected as *Bacha*, and the greatest favourite of the King of *Algier*. *Fenise* was then sorry that hee had presented himselfe in person to treat upon the liberty of *Frederick* having meanes to have done it otherwise, but dissembling the extreame confusion he was in, for feare of being discovered, he broke silence, and propounded what he demanded. Before *Mabomet* answered him, he asked him what he was, of what country, and how he was called, faigning to believe he was a Turke, although he knew him well enough. *Fenise* being reassured, boldly answered him in the *African* language, that he was a Turke of an illustrious family and native of *Fez*, and come to seeke Sanctuary near him, flying the cruelty of two brothers, which would have killed him, and that he was called *Gombor*; *Mabomet* admired the wit and carriage of *Fenise*, who disguised the truth with such art; but without playing further with him, he came to him and told him in his ear in *Spanish*, whatsoever cause hath brought you hither, you are welcome; in saying so, he tooke him by the hand, and made him sit downe by him, a favour which he did to no body. *Fenise* saw by his proceeding and language, that hee knew him: And *Mabomet* continuing to speak, *Fenise*, said he, you little esteem the sincerity of my heart, since you use so much art to disguise a truth so evident. I am sorry you hinder me so long from perfectly enjoying the joy I have to see you in a place where I have power to serve you, and testify by some occasion the sensible obligations I have to you and your father, whom I shall respect all my life, as
mine

mine owne, saying so he cast himselfe, upon *Fenise* his neck and straightly imbraced him. Our Cavalier touched with these singular proofes of the good nature of *Mabomet*, was constrained to declare himselfe, and yeeld to his courtesie, he bowed himselfe very low, and embraced his knees, and by the most civill complements his good wit could invent, made him understand, that respect had engaged him to this dissimulation, and as he was about to explicate his reasons, *Mabomet* made a signe with his eye, that he should hold his peace. All that saw their actions, knew not what to thinke thereof, principally that *Mabomet* should shew himselfe so affable towards this man, who was accustomed to be severe towards them. The *Bacba* would not that they should know more, commanded them to retire, and leave them alone, as they did, and then *Fenise* having rendered him a thousand testimonies of his joy, briefly told him all the history of his life, since he had left *Toledo* untill this happy encounter. *Mabomet* full of astonishment and admiration with the recitall of these strange misfortunes, promised to employ all his wealth and credit for his contentment, and to furnish him with means to return into *Spaine*, upon the first occasion that should be offered; after having learned that *Frederick* the slave he demanded to buy, was father to one of his intimate friends, he gave him to him to doe with him what he pleased; then he invited him to lodge in his house, but *Fenise* excused himselfe therefrom, judging that that might hinder the effect of his intentions; yet he could not defend himself from staying dinner with him. They begun to spread upon the ground

2

a great piece of Tapistry, upon which they dined. Then he was obliged to receive the visit of a Turk of quality who came to speak to him about an affair of importance, which caused *Fenise* to retire himself into an Anti-chamber, to let them devise more freely together. He walked there, and thanked God that *Mabomet* had treated him so humanely; and as he was upon these thoughts, he saw a little doore open into the Anti-chamber where he was, out of which came a faire Moore, richly habited, who seemed to be melancholique. Our Cavalier saluted her with an action full of respect and humility. The Moore made him a reverence after the mode of *Spaine*, whereat *Fenise* was astonished, but yet more, when she approached him, saying in the Spanish tongue.

THE CONTINUANCE OF THE HISTORY OF EUFEMIE.

Cavalier, said she, with a deep sigh, I have heard Call the recitall of the history you told to *Mabomet*, wherein by having named *Leonard*, a high Cavalier of the town of *Valence*, you have moved my memory to discourse upon the misfortunes of my life, and obliged my reason to acknowledge the faults which my impudence hath made me commit, from whence I suffer a most rigorous unquietnesse of spirit. I am the unfortunate *Eufemie*, I am that unhappy cause of the troubles of *Leonard* my brother

M

ther

ther, having preferred my ſentuell pleaſures before the duties of my birth and qualitie : I will not cloake my miſcarriages, though love might render them excuſable ; on the contrary, I deſire to make you a naked deſcription thereof, yet as ſhort as I can poſſible, whiſt the abſence of *Mabomet* giveth me leiſure, that by mine own ſhame, I may in your perſon render ſome ſatiſfaction to my brother, ſince you ſay you are his friend.

I loved paſſionately a Cavalier, which you have known from the mouth of my brother, as your diſcourſes have given me cauſe to preſume ; but ſo paſſionately that I left my houſe to follow him, he carried me to *Madrid* (I ought to hide my face, in telling you the infamous commerce that that man made me doe) where he rendered mee a publique Courtizan, not ſo much to ſatiſſie his neceſſity, as the vengeance he would take of my brother in my perſon and honour. From *Madrid*, for to ſave our ſelves from my brother who had diſcovered us, wee went to *Saragoe*, where wee ſtayed ſome moneths, and there I had the reputation of the moſt faire and famous Courtezan of that age, and as ſuch a one was viſited by the greateſt Gallants of the towne. During our ſtay there, *Don Pedro*, which you know to be the name of the cruell enemy of my brother, and my renowne, made friendſhip with a young Gentleman, whoſe merits were cheriſhed and eſteemed by a moſt noble Lady of an excellent wit and beauty, and the better to expreſſe her perfections, I pray you conſider, that they muſt needs be rare, ſince that being of my ſex, and the originall of my miſfortunes, I am yet conſtrained to praiſe her.

Axx-

Alexander, so was this Cavalier called which she loved, discovered part of the secrets of his soule, and amongst others that of his flame to *Don Pedro* his new friend. I may well say he gave him part of his fire, since that he rendered him taken with the love of *Cerintbe*, she was called so, neverthelesse durst not enterprise to declare unto her his feeling for feare *Alexander* should be offended therewith; and to avoide this inconveniencie, he betooke himselfe to art, in all occasion wherein I was spoke of in the presence of *Alexander*, *Don Pedro* spoke marvels of me, as if I had beene the most accomplished with beauty, wit, and merit, to the end to move him to love me, and oblige him to breake that mutuall band of amity that was vowed betwixt them, and thereby to imitate him and make *Cerintbe* his mistresse also to change. In a word he conducted his designe so cunningly, that it tooke as he imagined, *Alexander* courted me, *Don Pedro* seemed discontent therewith, and to revenge himselfe, got access neere *Cerintbe*, which he found easy enough at the beginning: there is no woman that is offended with being beloved, and she that doth not disapprove of the service of a lover, beginneth already to love. *Alexander* taken with this new affection, scarcely stirred from my lodging, neglecting by this meanes to visit *Cerintbe*, and she knowing his inconstancy rendered him the like, making love with *Don Pedro*. By succession of time *Alexanders* father was advertised of his debauches, he was told that his sonne entertained a courtezan a stranger which cost him much. And forasmuch as old people are covetous, and forget the follies of their youtnes, he could

not excuse this of his sonnes. He employed his credit so well, that the Justice commanded me to quit the towne in a certaine time. I seeing my selfe constrained to obey, gave notice thereof to *Don Pedro*; but instead of being sorry for it, he seemed to be very well pleased with this newes, because my absence gave him more libertie to passe his time with *Cerinthe*, so that one day he told me that I might goe whither I would, and that he could not then leave *Sarragoſe*. I seeing my selfe so unworthily used by this perfidious, and considering the resolution which he tooke to abandon me, being distasted with my person, I imagined he loved else where: in this opinion I used such exact diligence; that I discovered the cause of his disdaine, as I have now told you. I did not leave to require his assistance in this necessitie, adding imbracements to words, and representing unto him the obligations which he had to me, yea imploying some times, threats; for my jelousie and his contempt carryed me to furious extremities. In the end either by reasons or fear I made him resolve to quit *Sarragoſe*, and leave *Cerintbe*, but with designe to revenge himſelfe cruelly of my persecutions, as I have since learned. He deferred our departure as long as he could possible, and stayed untill the very last day the Justice had given me for that effect. In the end wee tooke together the way to *Valence*, he did nothing but curse by the way, there came nothing out of his mouth but insolencies, injuries, and threatenings; he drew his poynard and presented it unto me, then he put it againe into the scabbard; in brieſe he so affrighted me, that every moment I believed he was about
to

to open my breast and pull out my heart, he seemed to be so full of fury & rage: being arrived at our first Inne, it was impossible for me to take any foode. I went to bed weeping bitterly for my faults, and endeavouring to invent some way to deliver my selfe from this traytor: the next morning he pressed me to be gone on our voyage, and I, fearing he would put me to some tragique end, fained to be sick, and prayed him to defer it one day, which he granted at the solicitation of the host and hostesse who had pittie of me seeing me weepe, but it was not without many curses. Heaven which desires not alwayes the losse of those that offend it, which lets them live to amend and repent, yea and assists them to oblige them the more to acknowledge it in the midst of their extreame necessities, conducted *Mahomet* to the same Inne where we were. And because he arrived at a time when *Don Pedro* was gone to walke by the side of a little river, which was neere thereunto, not being able to stay in my company, I had leasure to consider his fashion and behaviour: I saw he had a good countenance that he was of a proportion big and strong; and joyning to these circumstances that he was well mounted, and very well habited, I tooke him for a gentleman or a man of honour; In this thought without knowing him to be an infidell and no christian, I went to aske his assistance. I succinctly told him my history, and the extreame trouble I was in, beseeching him, since that he went the same way, to follow us unto the first towne, without losing sight of us to hinder that my perfidious conductor might not doe me some displeasure. *Mahomet* having considered my

language & countenance, had his heart touched with compassion as he hath since told me and promised me very courteously, to satisfie al that I could desire from his service; with this assurance, I told *Don Pedro* that I was ready to depart when he would, he tooke me at my word, and about two houres before sun setting, we left this lodging following on our way. At the beginning of the night we arrived at the entry of a wood; then I looked behind me and perceived *Mahomet*, who had not yet appeared, which a little moderated my feare. We were scarcely in this wood when I knew that we had left the great way, and that we were in a little path, we are out of the way cryed I to *Don Pedro*, no, no, answered he, follow me; it is the nearest for our journey. I who was in perpetuall distrust, believed these words were equivocall, and that the nearest which he meant, was to finde the issue of my life. I turned my selfe yet once, and saw my defendor follow us, I tooke courage, and a little time after *Don Pedro* turned towards me. You are in the right said he; I believe we are out of the way, and since that there is no way more here, let us light. What neede is there of that said I. Away, away we must, replied he with a tone extraordinary. I will take here the last vengeance of the hatred I beare to thy blood and person which hath rendered it self too odious to mine eyes by contradicting my pleasures; saying so, he tooke his poniard in his hand, and attempted to strike me down from the Mule whereupon I was mounted; seeing the rage of this action, and the glittering of the iron, wherewith he would have sacrificed me to his felony; I cried out, Ah cruell, what thinkest thou

to doe? and endeavoured to stay his arme, or at least to slacken the blow. At the same time I was succoured by valiant *Mahomet*, who came running with his sword in his hand, crying, Traytor what wilt thou doe? Mine enemy seeing the sudden apparition of this protector, knew not if it was not an angell in the figure of a man; yet he drew his sword to defend his life, but the other assailed him so furiously, that his endeavours were unprofitable, he made him give up his soule in the same place where he thought to have murdered me. At the echo of these clamours and my lamentings, an unknown man came in, it may bee with deligne to succour those he heard complaine, but *Mahomet* tooke a pistoll which was at his saddle bow, prayed this unknown to passe no further, and to suffer him to goe without further informing himselfe of any thing. I am much deceived if you bee not he of whom I speak, the discourse which I heard you hold to *Mahomet* giveth mee a great presumption thereof. We took our hortes, and went towards the towne of *Tortose*, I saw I ought my life to this Cavalier, and for that reason it seemed to me I was obliged to follow him whither he would lead me; without knowing either his nation or religion; I took him for a Spaniard, because he spoke the language perfectly well. Coming neare *Tortose*, he told me, that he did not thinke it expedient for us to goe thither, for feare of some ill successe, because of the homicide committed; so that turning out of the right way, he carried me to a *Bourge* near to the sea shoare, and in a place called the neck of *Balaguer*, where are little armes, where the Moors

hide themselves, and from whence they make sallies and courses upon the Christian countries. In fine, whether he had notice to be there, or that fortune conducted him thither, he found a Galley of Pirates, whereof the chiefe came with great respect to speak to him, and upon the instant they prepared themselves to return. Then *Mabomet* let mee know, that hee intended to carry me along with him, he declared unto me his country, and promised the sweetest entertainment that I could hope for amongst my Kindred. I seeing my selfe obliged to satisfie him either by fair means or constraint, I heaved up my shoulders, and testified to him a silent consentment, though it was not without shedding many teares, and making many sobs, considering to what misfortune my faults would engage me, as amongst others to goe finish the rest of my daies amongst barbarian infidels, far from the exercise of the christian faith, being altogether abandoned to the mercy of *Mabomet*, I esteemed my self as his slave; but although he was of a barbarous nation, yet hee was of so courteous a nature, that he used me with all the respect he could possibly render to a Lady to whom he was inferior. He saw well that I had cause to weep and afflict my self as I did, therefore he used no violence, to make me forget my disgraces, he onely attempted to divert my troubles, with much modestie and discretion. In brieft considering the extreame misery whereunto my stars had reduced me, I might esteeme my selfe very happy; for there are disasters, which ought to bee esteemed as felicities, when one knoweth they have been in danger to suffer greater. One day during our navigation, hee related unto me

me the noblenesse of his extraction, the courses which he had made upon the Christians, that in the same Gally where we were he had been made a slave, and sold to a Spanish Gentleman of the towne of *Madrid*, who finding himself beholden to him for great services he had done him in a certain quarrel, and that seeing he would not turn Christian, had given him his liberty with money and a good horse, for to returne into his countrie, having before disguised him like a Spaniard to the end he might passe more securely, and not be knownewhat hee was. And this was the cause that I demanded his assistance, believing him by his habits to be a Gentleman of our nation. Having much lamented my misfortunes. I must resolve to have patience, and referre all to divine mercy, in comforting my selfe that I am falne into the hands of a man of excellent behaviour which he learned in *Castile*. We arrived in this town, where being received by his father with open armes, and cherished by the King, he is now his onely favourite. I hold the same place towards him, he loveth me with passion, as being as he saith, the onely pleasure of his life; he hath never spoken to me to change my religion, for hee beleeveth that ought to come voluntarily without any force or restraint. The contentments which hee giveth mee, and the care he hath to see me served, are so great, that there are but two things which trouble me, the profession of my faith, and my dear Country, without that there is no felicity in the world that can be entire. The reception he hath made of you accompanied with so many honours testifie, that he esteemeth you much. I have
often

often heard him speake of you before your arrivall, as of a Gentleman most accomplished ; therefore you may assure your selfe of his amitie, and believe that he will employ himselfe in all occasions where you shall have need of his credit, and also for your returne into *Spaine* when you shall desire it. If I could but follow you, and that you would but carry me thither with you, I assure my selfe you would have cause to commend the acknowledgment my brother and I should make you for it. *Fenise* was about to answer her, but upon the instant a servant came to advertise them, that the *Bacha* their Lord was coming thither, which obliged him to attend another occasion. *Eufemie* retired into her chamber by the same door shee came, which shee shut as before ; and leaving *Fenise* in great admiration, made him know in the end, that *Mabomet* and she had been the cause of the pains which hee had suffered, having been like to have lost his life shamefully, being accused for killing *Don Pedro*, and kept prisoner for that subject. *Mabomet* excused himself to *Fenise* for having left him so long alone; *Fenise* replied by those civilities which are ordinarily used in such complements, then they continued to speake of times passed, wherein they both tooke great pleasure. Thereupon they came to tell them that dinner was ready, where the stranger was magnificently treated after the fashion of the country. In the interim *Mabomet* made a lodging to be prepared for him in the towne, sending all things necessary for a household. The evening being come, he was carried to take possession of his house, whereof he remained absolute master.

Here

Here one may finde occasion to marvell at the inconstancy of things, and the strange mutation of fortune. It is not long since *Fenise* was tossed by the fury of contrary windes, and at the present he hath the winde of favour in poape, not long since he was tumbled and tormented in a ship, and now he is courteously received in a Palace, yesterday he was naked, and to day clothed with rich ornaments, yesterday in a storme at sea, and to day honoured upon earth, yesterday fearing to be made a slave, and to day possessing the graces and favours of a prince. He had an extreame passion to see the daughter of *Frederick*, which we call *Magdalene*, as well because it was her proper name, as also being more pleasant to the eare then that of *Carise*, which they had given her at *Algier*.

Fenise was become amorous of her, without seeing her, but by the simple relation of her beauties, which he had heard her Father make. He dyed with impatience to attaine to this pleasant vision. But forasmuch as the passions of love are wounds that reach to the very bottome of the breast, they must have a long time to be cured, so that to think to arrive at the end without passing by the middle, is either a thing impossible, or very dangerous, so that his discretion was willing to give leasure to time to work with her, without using violence.

Whilst *Fenise* renewed his acquaintance with the *Bacha Mahomet*, and received his favours. *Frederick* ravished with joy for the happy encounter he had made, and the faire hopes which were given him, would carry newes thereof to his daughter, that
shee

he might partake in his contentment, but he found the breach of the wall made up, and his passage stopped; the owner of this Garden had repaired this breach it may bee for his proper commodity, or it may be because he had seen him passe that way. Seeing himselfe thus deprived of this little good that rested to him, he begunne againe to lament his misfortunes, and with teares in his eyes, came to seeke his consolation in the wits of generous *Fenise*. His dwelling was not now where he had lodged, he possessed the house which *Mabomet* had made to be accommodated for him. He received him there with the most courteous welcome that was possible, and told him that he had obtained his libertie, having let *Mabomet* know that he was father to one of his most intimate friends, and from that hour he retained him to dwell with him, in expecting some meanes for the deliverance of his daughter *Magdelene*. *Frederick* embraced him anew with a thousand thanks, for the affection which he had testified to him: But *Fenise* observed the sadnesse which he had in his countenance, and asked him the cause thereof. Then *Frederick* declared unto him that his last consolation was taken from him, the place being stopped by which he passed to see his daughter.

Fenise having known the cause of his displeasure, led him into a Gallery which was on the back side of his lodging from whence one might see the Kings house on that side the tower was, which was over against it, and in shewing it to him, he sayd, If that be the tower vvhwhereof you have spoken to me, you need not so much despaire as you doe.

doe. Alas, it is the same answered *Frederick*, but the distance from hence thither, is too great to speak to her, if we had occasion to give her advice of any thing, yet we are happy replied *Fenise*, that we are no further from it, but that from the one place to the other we may easily know and distinguish the features of the face; let us then content our selves with what it pleaseth heaven to give us, perhaps it will furnish us with some invention from whence we may draw more benefit then we can imagine. *Frederick* suffered himselfe to be perswaded by this consolation, and determined to keep watch in this Gallery, looking every moment if *Magdelene* or the Christian slave which served her should come to the window. But because she had there presented her selfe three or four times, without seeing *Frederick*, because of the accident that was happened, she made no more account to appear there, judging that there was some great impediment happened to their felicity.

This opinion was the cause that *Frederick* passed a whole week in measuring the length of this Gallery, and counting the minutes of every day. In the end as he was deploring his misery, being out of all hope of ever seeing againe his dear daughter; for the last time he cast his eyes upon the window, and saw *Magdelene* and her slave, who looked upon him contesting together whether it was he or no; for the unknown house and gallery where he was, put them in this doubt. Then *Frederick* lifting up his eyes to heaven in action of thankfulness, and extending his armes towards her, leaning over the parapet made himself known, and put them out of doubt

doubt. He let them understand as well as he could by his actions why he could come no more to the foot of the Tower, and that from thenceforwards he might see her from the place where he was, because he dwelt there, and was no longer slave; then after a little time, *Magdalene* made to him the signe of farewell untill the next day, and shut her window, for fear of abusing the favours of fortune, or that *Selin* should perceive them.

Fenise at that time stirred not from *Mabomet*, courting and entertaining his affections, and when the night obliged him to retreat, *Frederick* made him the recitall of what he had seen, and that he hoped to have the same contentment the next day: That he thought it would not be amiss to make *Magdalen* believe that he was her Brother of whom he had many times spoken to her, to the end she might present herself more freely. Our Cavalier found this no ill invention, because it suited to his desires; he told him he should absolutely dispose of his person and life: But dear *Frederick* (said he) when a man enterpriseth an affaire, difficult, dangerous, and serious, he ought to foresee all the inconveniences imaginable, which may hinder his design, for to attempt to surmount them, and come to a happy successe. We must then goe here with great warinesse, and take exact heed to our selves in the beginning, for feare of failing in the end. You said (as I remember) that *Magdalene* is so recluse, and retired, that no one seeth her but the King, and from thence I fear that she will not shew her self, seeing me with you, imagining that I am some Turk; but to warrant us from this danger, I think it fit to change my habits, I have

have found an invention to get the box brought hither, which we buried at the entry of the Forrest, where I found you after my shipwrack; I will take an habit that is therein, and then when *Magdalen* shall see me clothed after the Spanish fashion, you may the better perswade her that I am her Brother. *Frederick* approved of his opinion, and *Fenise* shewed him a suit made for the Country, of gray cloth, covered with plate lace of gold and silver, and compleat with all other furniture. The day being come, so impatiently expected by these two friends. *Frederick* set himself upon the watch in the Gallery, and not long after saw the window open, and *Magdalen* and her slave appear. He made her a sign to stay, and went to fetch *Fenise* to let him see his daughter; he came, he saw, and was overcome; the imagination which he had formed to himself of the beauties of *Magdalen* was very imperfect in comparison of the originall which he admired. During his ravishment, *Magdalen* carefully considered him, astonished with this new fashion of habit, and with the grace and good countenance which he had, yet without knowing who he was.

Her spirit was much troubled to explicate this Enigma; but in the end, her Father forced her by imbracements and other signes to comprehend that it was her Brother. She understood it, and then her admiration was converted into confusion, endeavouring to divine by what means he was come into that place, for she had learned of her Father the History of his birth and losse. *Fenise* made all the gestures of respect and love he could devise, to testify to her that he was not only her Brother, but her

her slave and defendor; she rendred him those reverences and salutations which courtesie obliged her to, testifying with her armes, that she imbraced him with her heart. Whilst *Magdalen* and *Fenise* entertained themselvs with these mute complements, *Erimene* attentively considered our Cavalier, this was the name that this Christian slave had taken to disguise her own; by much regarding him, she thought she knew him, and well remembring herself, she remembred his name, and the place where she had seen him. She judged, that since they endeavoured to give an impression to her Mistress that this was her Brother, it was not necessary to declare to her what she knew, for fear of breaking some favourable project to the contentment of her Father, she resolved to keep silence, and see to what end would come all these confusions. In the interim it was not permitted them to stay any longer in the presence one of another. *Erimene* carefull to manage occasion, made signe to *Frederick* and *Fenise* to retire, yet advising the old man to be at the same place two hours after, and when the Sun was neer setting, *Magdalen* made them the sign of adieu, and shut her window, leaving our Cavalier more captive then all the slaves in *Barbary*, having sacrificed to her at the very instant of his first regard, his liberty, heart, and life, resolved to hazard all to deliver her from the subjection wherein she was. He returned to change his habits, and take those of a Turk to go visit *Mabomet*. He was very carefull to conserve his good will, and observe him in every thing, that he might make use of his credit if there should be occasion thereof, although he had de-

declared nothing to him of his design, nor of the intelligence he had with *Frederick*; for fear his zeale to serve the King might surmount the amitie which he bore him. He knew so well how to make use of the favours of this Moor, that he made him believe he took no care to return into his Country; and that after so many misfortunes received there, he would condunce it, and was determined to stay there with him as long as he should please. *Mabomet* finding himself obliged to his affection, would testifie the esteem that he made thereof, by installing him in the charge of *Subbaeha*, (an office of justice, as one may say Corrector, or Judge of policick Government) which *Fenise* willingly accepted, seeing it was an excellent meanes to bring about his design, seeing that this charge made him befeared of the people, esteemed by the Nobles, and generally beloved and respected of all. The night begun to extend it self upon the face of the Earth, when venerable *Frederick* rendred himself in the gallery, and saw immediatly the window open, and *Erimene* appear, holding a bow and arrow, which she shot against a wall, a little further off then the place where he was, making a signe to him that he should take it up. *Erimene* having seen him doe what she desired, departed, and shut the window. *Frederick* perceived that this arrow had a little paper rouled about the end thereof, instead of a pile, and industriously accommodated; he judged that there was some mystery hidden; he untied it, and saw that it was a letter directed to him; he presently went to finde *Fenise* to let him read the same with him, not being willing to have a secret which he

N

should

should not have full knowledg of. They opened it, and saw that it was the Castalian tongue, containing this discourse.

THE LETTER OF MAG. DELENE TO FREDE- RICK HER FATHER.

Sir,

THe signes and gestures which you have lately made to me, letting me understand that the Gentleman which accompanied you is my Brother, which was lost from his birth, hath left my spirit in a Labyrinth so confused, that it is impossible to get out thereof without a more clear and ample explanation. I cannot comprehend how he should be come into this barbarous Country with the habit he weareth, and be in liberty, without having renounced Christianity, which I cannot believe he hath done; for being issued from your blood, he could not have committed so cowardly a perfidiousness, and so infamous an impiety; and although my just curiosity might merit some satisfaction, yet I do not hope that you can content it: I am now held so short, that it is scarcely permitted me to leave the presence of *Selin*, his passion and jealousy is so violent, that he yet doubteth if I be where he findeth me; this is it that hath hindred me so long time from seeing you, and will yet deprive me of that contentment. But I have found an invention whereby we may entertain one another, by writing and letters, during the silence and obscurity of the night.

The

The King hath certain birds of the bigness of Black-birds, which sleep all the day, I know not whether it be by custome which is given them, or their proper nature; but it seems that Heaven hath so ordained it for our consolation particular. In the night they fly, and feed by candle-light, whither hunger makes them go as they see it. He hath given me one of them, which shall be our faithfull messenger, if you please, this is the industry we will use. The night being come, you shall be in your Gallery, with a candle in a cleare lanthorne, and when I shall see that light, I will put out mine in my chamber, and let go the bird; he shall have a letter delicately fastned under one of his wings, he will fly strait to you, and pearch near your candle; you will easily take him, for he is very tame; then you may untie his letter, and having seen it, if you please, answer it; you may fasten it in the same manner you shall see, then take away your candle, and I will light mine, and come to the window, and presently the bird will return to me. To proceed therein more securely, and avoid danger, which may incurre, if our art should be discovered; let us make proof thereof with a little piece of whize paper, instead of a letter. Make yourself ready the night after this, and be in the Gallery about twelve a clock. God prosper happily the Invention to his honour and glory.

Frederick and *Fenise* embraced one another, seeing so cleare an appearance of a power to communicate and resolve together some great enterprize for their common liberty, *Magdelene* being couragious, and *Erismus* very ingenious. It was she that had writ

ten this Letter; for although the other knew the Castalian language, having learned it of *Erimene*, she was not so expert as to write in that stile; they praised and admired this favourable invention, as in truth they had cause, it being extream rare, secret, and subtile; but there is nothing that a woman will not finde out to surmount the obstacles vvhich oppose her contentment: In vain doe fathers and husbands shut their doors, and wall up their windows, and guard their walls, to avoid scandall, and to take from their Daughters and Wives the intelligence they might have with their Lovers: the more they are shut up, the more leisure is given them to exercise their wits, and to invent means to overcome what hinders them; there is no Tower high enough, nor locks, nor doors, nor walls strong enough to conserve their honours, if they do not guard them themselves.

Fenise glad to see so fair a way laid open to his hopes, prepared an answer to this sweet letter, that the messenger might not stay that came to fetch it. The time assigned to *Frederick* being come, he rendered himself at the place assigned, with a candle in a lanthorn, for feare the wind of the birds wings should put it out, or that she might offend herself, and without attending long, he heard a signe given at the window of the Tower, and at the same instant the angelicall bird came, and perched upon his arm, which he presented to her for that effect near the candle. *Fenise* and he took her safely, finding the white paper, and untying it, put their answer in the place thereof; then hiding their light, according to the instructions received, they saw that
of

of the the towre to appeare, and let goe this faithfull and able confident, in the twinkling of an eye she rendered her selfe betwixt the hands of her mistresse, who gave her the most sweete and amiable nourishment of her face, accompanied with a thousand amorous kisses, payd her the portage of the letter she brought. The hand wherein it was written was knowne by *Erimene*; confirming her in the opinion she had that this Caviler which *Fredrick* would have passe for the brother of *Magdelene* was a gentleman of *Toledo*, to whome she had often times spoken, and seene verses of his writing, yet she did not declare her thought to *Magdelene*, who impatient to know what this letter containd prayed *Erimene* to reade it.

FREDERICKS ANSWER
TO HIS DAUGHTER

MY daughter, it must be some Angelicall spirit that hath given you this invention, it is so excellent that I cannot enough praise it, I scarcely complaine any longer my disaster, having this admirable maner of comforting my selfe with you; but we must goe discretely to worke to prevaile in our deliverance, from the tyranny wherein we are. I hope it by the aide of God and the courage of your brother, who taketh great care for our comune contentment. A strange adventure hath brought him hither, to take parte of our miseries, or to deliver us from them, his liberty is conserved by the meanes of a powerful friend he hath in this towne, let this suf-

face you for the present. If we can but conserue this communication, by the intermission of this flying messenger, and a cypher which I would haue us use, we shall presently come to the end of some high enterprife: the secret of our cypher shall be to take the neighbouring letters to those we haue need of; as for example in stead of an *A.* take a *B.* for *B.* take *C.* for *C.* *D.* and so untill *Z.* for the which *Z.* we will take two *AA.* then for to say, I adore you, I would put these letters, *K. B E P S F. Z P W.* yet if you finde not this convenient, you may let it alone; but for my part I shal alwayes much esteeme this cypher, as most necessary to my good fortune and the secret.

Thus ended this letter which left some kinde of sorrow in the minde of *Magdene* because she assured her selfe that this unknowne Cavalier was her brother. This proximitie did not please her, for as much as it did not accord with the love that begun to take place in her heart. *Erimene* that penetrated into her most secret thoughts, perceived well that there was something in the letter that pleased her not, and to be cleared of the suspicion which she had conceiued, she prayed *Magdene* to tell her what it was that troubled her, to the end she might comfort her. Deere companion of my captivity said *Magdene* to her, you haue just occasion to complaine of me, if I should reserve any secret from you, and to testifie that my heart is open to you, I will tell you truly, that since the houre that my father made me to see the Cavalier, I haue had extraordinary troubles. I know not whether it proceed from the influence of the stars, Blood, or the graces
of

of that gentleman, but I have suffered since that moment, unquietnesses which I have hitherto been ignorant of, and also I have a certaine sorrow that he is so neere unto me, I have said enough I am ashamed that I have so freely confessed my fragilitie unto you.

The ingenious *Erimene* having heard these words, which confirmed what she had before imagined, thought that this was a proper occasion to declare reciprocally to *Magdelene*, the secret which she had hidden from her, to incourage her love which ought to serve as a foundation to the edifice of their liberty. Since that you have spoken to me with so much freedom, said *Erimene*, J am obliged to imitate you, lest J give you occasion to accuse me of ingratitude, and this shal be now to acquit me of that which J owe to the affection which you have so particularly testified unto me. Vntill this present J have concealed from you, my true name, birth and country; not to follow the ordinary custome of those, who seeing themselves in a miserable condition, vaunt to be of a greater extraction then they are, to the end to move compassion or courtesie in others. J told you at our first meeting that J was called *Erimene*, that J was of the kingdome of *Aragon*, and of meane condition, at this present J will confesse the truth to you. J am called *Leonor Velazquez*; J am of *Toledo* and of noble birth. Then she made him an ample narration of all the history which we have already recited, of the death of *Felix* and her servant, and the cruelty of *Don Johan* her brother; as it hath beene said in the first booke, then she continued saying. Having then considered by the tra-

gique end of this unhappy lover (which dyed for being disguised in my person) by the cruelty of *Don Jouan* my brother, and seeing also that he had slaine her in thinking to have killed me , J conceived so great a hatred against him , and his presence was so odious to me, that since that time it was impossible for me to stay in his company. For to separate my selfe entirely from him, J left *Toledo*, and went with one of my cosens to the towne of *Leride* scituate in the province of *Catalogna*. Amongst the pleasant conversations of this towne, J saw a Cavalier whose perfections and good offices which he rendered mee, obliged me to give him my heart and soule , that J might not be reputed scornfull nor ingratefull. But with your permission J will attend a more convenient time to recount unto you how J came to see him , what ingaged me to love him, what adventure brought me into this region, and what subject hath ravished from me this object of my affection. J will not for the present entertaine you with other things but what may be proper to comfort you in the paine you are in , and moderate the unquietnesse of your spirit. For this cause J tell you that this Cavalier, which they disguise with the name of *Don Louis*, is called *Fenise*. J have divers times spoken and discoursed with him, as being the intimate friend of my brother *Don Jouan*. J knew then all his kindred , and as soone as your father let us see him with him, in Spanish habits, J knew him to be the same J have now told you. But having reasoned upon the disguisement under the which your father presented him to us , J doe imagine that he did it for feare his presence which was unknowne to
you

You should give you some apprehension. To tell you by what meanes he is come hither, how he hath made friendship with your father, nor by what title he possesseth the house where he dwelleth, I cannot, for they are things I have no knowledge of, but of his valour, generositie, discretion and wit I can much commend; although not so much as his merites deserve, so that if your sorrow proceede from the feare you have he is too neere you, you may banish it at this instant, and place instead of it, a hope to arrive one day at a glorious successe, provided that we can but recover our deere libertie. I this day see, answered *Magdalene*, that heaven is interessed in the alliance of our amitie, I receive so much consolation from you, that I do no longer fear what troubles can befall me, the knowledge which you have given me of this Cavalier, disperseth all the confusions wherewith my spirit was troubled. In the paine which I had to believe what my father would make me understand, I was a little moved to wish him well, but for the present, I must confesse to you that he possesseth my heart, and that I take an extreame pleasure in the increase of my affection. I perceive now nothing that can trouble me upon this subject but feare that he should want inclination to esteeme my amitie. No, No, answered *Leonor*, you must not trouble your selfe anew, I have experience enough, to judg of him the just contrary to that thought: I can assure you that he loveth you: And that it must be so, I will give you a testimony cleare enough, let us looke againe upon the letter, looke you, regarde this example which he giveth you, to use the Cypher: it is not without mystery that he useth these

these words, I adore you: ading afterwards yet if you finde this not convenient, you are not constrained, the will ought to be free: but for my part I shall alwaies much esteeme these Cyphers as most necessary to my good fortune; All these words are equivocall, and written by him with designe to explicate unto you his feelings.

Magdelene easily believed what *Leonor* perswaded her, because her discourse sympathized with her desires, she prayed her to make an answer for her to *Fenise*, and to use the propounded cypher, as well to disguise her thoughts to her father, as to let her lover see the esteeme she made of his counsell. *Leonor* was not much prayed to render her this service, she was interessed therein by the desire she had to leave her captivitie; for she knew *Fenise* to be so hardy and able a man, that he would not spare his life to attempt their deliverance. She writ to him discreetly the thoughts of her friend, leting him understand that she was the secretary; that she would serve him in all honest things he could desire; and in the end conjured him, that in case there was any hopes of liberty, to remember her in the quality of the sister of *Don Johan*.

This letter was sent him hy the ayre as the former, *Fenise* received it with joy, and read it with ravishment, his love and courage augmented to the double: love is the sonne of *Mars* as well as of *Venus*. What gladnesse felt he when he knew that *Leonor* was companion to his mistresse, he promised himselfe better successe in all his designs, as well for that which regarded his passion, as for the projects he had to ravish *Magdelene* from the possession of the
king

king of *Algier*. He knew *Leonor* to have an excellent wit, and to be very capable to helpe in a great enterprise: adding also, that in procuring her liberty he should deserve pardon for the death of her brother.

The next day after the receipt of this letter, *Fenise* went to visit the *Bacha Mabomet*, to entertaine his amitie, and not to be unthankfull for the favours which he continually received from him: and because *Mabomet* loved much his conversation he kept him to sup with him, so that he was long before he returned to his owne house. In the interim, *Frederick* stayed there to watch if there was any newes from *Magdelene* & as he walked in the Gallery, regarding from time to time this amiable window, about a leaven of the clock at night he there perceived a light, this made him thinke that the messenger, might well have some dispatch, to bring to him, and thereupon he went to fetch a light, placed it in the gallery as a counterfigne, it was scarcely seene when that of the window appeared no more, and immediately the faithfull bird arrived with this writing which was directed to *Fenise*, yet *Frederick* opened it, for they were in so good intelligence that there was no secret betwixt them.

THE LETTER OF MAGDE- LENE. TO DON FENISE.

I Doe not know whether or no my father hath told you, that for a long time the King of *Algier*, hath prosecuted and solicited me to consent to the proposition

proposition which he daily maketh me to marry me. If you doe not already know it, I now tell you of it. At the present his passion preffeth him so violently, that since yesterday he hath threatened me to convert his love into anger, and instead of respects and favours, which I may hope from him, I shall receive cruell rigours, If I doe not resolve to content him within a moneth. He hath represented unto me, that for the love of me he hath used my father with lesse severitie then all the other slaves, that he goeth and cometh where and when he will, but if I doe not adhere to his desires within the time limited; he hath protested unto me to make him feelee what a power angered can doe, and to finish upon me the vengeance of the contempt which he sayeth I have made, of the honour he would raise me to; and the good he procureth me. Judg then in what a-larme I am, consider what apprehensions I have to arrive at the limits of the time he hath prescribed to me for feare of being abandoned to the greatest misfortunes that can arrive, seeing my father suffer upon my occasion. But if heaven inspire you with some industry to deliver me from the extreame torment which my soule suffereth, in the name of God execute it betwixt this, and the prefixed terme which is given me. And if we can (*Leonor* and I) contribute any thing to this diligence, advertise us, and believe that we will be most hardy and courageous, to enterprize it, and to dye generously for want of good successe. Make hast then, if you love me, and if you esteeme the irrevocable gift I make you of my heart.

Fenise being returned to his house, *Frederick* chew-
ed

ed him the letter he had received, the which caused great disquietnesse in them both the rest of the night. They laboured with their spirits to invent some stratagem to deliver this beauty from the pain wherein she was, but as many designs as they plotted so many difficulties they found in the execution thereof. In the end after divers propositions, they could not foresee any good successe, by reason of the recluse life which *Selin* made them lead; yet they were resolved to undermine the tower where *Magdene* lodged, and steale her away with *Leonor*, when there should any vessell arrive, wherein they might carry them into *Spaine*. The house of *Fenise* was in a scituation very favourable to their enterprise, near to the Palace, and without any obstacle betwixt them, the space was nothing but a garden, which appertained to *Fenise*; besides, the earth was sandy and easie to digge. All the difficultie was to finde an invention to sustain the earth; for being sandy, it was subject to fall in, and capable to overthrow them and choak them in their work. But *Frederick* was of opinion to break up a boarded floor in *Fenise* his house, to take the boards and joists to serve for that businesse. Having ripely consulted the execution of this project, and seeing that this was the onely meanes for their safety, they resolved to try their fortune; they gave advice thereof to the prisoners, counselling *Magdene* to change her lodging, and to pray the King to give her the lowest room of the tower where she was, and also to take the extent of her lodging with a thread, and to send it by their ordinary post, to the end they might not open the mouth of the mine in any other

ther place but her chamber. All this was executed as it was devised, the King agreed with a good heart, that *Magdelene* should lodge where she thought good; so that she and *Leonor* tooke justly the measure, and sent it to them. In the meantime *Frederick* and *Fenise* were provided of instruments proper for their designe, they set their levell to the which the knowledge of the *Mathematicques* serves perfectly which comprehends *Geometry*, which *Fenise* understood excellently, and during the silence of the night, whilst men slept they wrought with an incomparable courage underpropping the earth as they hollowed it. Heaven which had inspired them with this invention, conducted their hands so happily, that within a little distance from the place where they begun their work, and the first night they found a straight cave, which extended it self in length directly towards the end of their design. Ravished with joy they fell incontinently upon their knees, and gave thanks to God being perswaded that this could not have happened but by miracle. They entred boldly therein, and saw that it was the work of man, and ended at the foundation of the wall of the Palace; this foundation was so large and strong, that other courages lesse constant then theirs, would have given over the enterprize, there were such terrible stones, that for to demolish and displace onely one, they must consume all their force, tooles and time; they gave not over, for all that, they visited, searched, and groped all over with their irons, in the end they knocked in a place which sounded not like stone, they regarded more carefully, and knew that it

was

was a little door covered with bars of iron, so rusty that it was not to be distinguished from the stone, but onely with the touch of a hammer. They contented themselves with their labour for this time, and went to repose the rest of the night, with resolution to continue the next day, and labour to break this door with croes of Iron, and force the bolts wherewith it was shut. The beginning of the night following, as *Frederick* walked in the Gallery, expecting the houre to goe to work, he received a Letter, wherein was inclosed the thrid which contained the necessary measure, for the better conducting of the opening of the mine, by which letter they learned, that it was be done under the chamber of *Leonor*, because that of *Magdelene* advanced more into the Palace by two fathoms. Animated with an extraordinary courage, they went into their mine, furnished with files, croes, pincers, and other irons proper to break and beat in pieces all obstacles that they should meet with. They had not so much trouble as they apprehended, time and moisture had wrought for them, and taken away more than the half of their pains, the bolts and locks were so old, rusty, and consumed, that they scarcely presented their irons to them, but they yielded to them, and opened upon them, they found the entry stopped with planks, and a certain kinde of matter like plaister, which did not much resist them, passing further they saw a greater concavittie, which extended it self two wayes, they took that they judged most fit for their project; after they visited the other in every corner, but amongst all these turnings under ground, they could not finde
any

any issue nor entrance, but that which they had made, they were both ravished with astonishment, and yet very glad, thinking they might now work securely, without being surpris'd or discovered, as they apprehended before they had broken the door, not knowing what they should find on the other side. They begun to consider for what use these caverns were, and in the end imagined, that some Tyrant of *Algier*, fearing he should lose his Kingdom, and have his person seized upon, had caused them to be made to save himselfe, if there should be occasion, and that time had taken away the memory thereof, and filled up the entry. Then they tooke the measure which was sent them, and multiplying it as often as the Letter spoke of, found that one of the armes of these Caves reached just under the Lodging of *Leonor*, being twelve Foote distant from that of *Magdene*.

They gave over work and retired, to give notice thereof to those for whom they did it; they sent them word that it seemed that God wrought for them, and conducted their enterprize, having found all their work almost done, by the means of caves which they found, telling them also, that they believed they were come under the lodging of *Leonor*: These two friends, ravished with joy of this comfortable newes, answered them, that the night following *Leonor* would knock with a piece of wood upon the floor of her chamber, to give them a certaine signe of the place where she was.

With this intelligence *Frederick* and *Fenise* continued

tinued their exercise of labouring pioners, and when those planks and boards they were provided of, were usefull unto them, they underpropped the vault for fear of being overthrown, and at the end of their work to end their lives. This work was extream painfull for these men which were not accustomed to it, besides, being but two, they could have done no great matter: In effect, without meeting with these hollow places which they found, they had died in the enterprife. All they did, during six nights, was only to underprop as well as they could that compasse of the vault where they pretended to make the hole; and yet they were carefull to advertise *Magdelene* and *Leonor* thereof, to the end they should not lose the hope they had given them; having underpropped it, they yet employed three nights to break the vault, ever and anon listning to judge of the thickness by the blows which they expected must be given by *Leonor* or *Magdelene*. In the end they heard them, which made a harmony which charmed their senses; this animated their courages, but their forces failed them, so that for to take new vigour they remitted the rest of their travail untill another night; it was impatiently expected, but it came according to its order, they began again to break, but they had scarcely employed a quarter of an hour, when they saw they had no more need of croes and hammers, and that the earth fell down of it self. Then *Leonor*, who had heard the noise of their hammers, knocked upon the floor of her lodging, and made her self to be heard so clearly to our workmen, that they judged that they had not above two foot

of thicknesse left; they continued vigorously, and the stones and earth came so fast towards their center, that in a little time they pierced and entred into the chamber of *Leonor*, whom they found alone, and who received them with amorous imbracements. Having thanked God for this happy event, they went to repose, deferring untill the next day the seeing of *Magdelene*, who was retired, not believing that they could this night finish their enterprize, and because it was three a clock, *Leonor* judged they ought not to waken her, for fear that some unexpected misfortune might discover their secret. This judicious consideration obliged the two friends to moderate the vehemency of their desires, not for to hazard that in a moment, which they hoped to possesse many years; when they were departed, *Leonor* set a table over the mouth of the Myne, and put a great Turkey Carpet upon it, and as soon as it was day she went into the chamber of *Magdelene*, and saluted her with this pleasant and miraculous newes; *Magdelene* would scarcely take time to dresse herself, she was so impatient to see this happy hole. She considered with joy and admiration, figuring to her self, that although it tended towards the center of the earth, yet it was the way to Paradise, and a favourable issue to escape out of the hands of these Infidels, and come again into the exercise of the soveraign and only Religion. She was a little troubled that *Leonor* had enjoyed alone the presence of her Father and Lover, reproaching her for not calling her; but *Leonor* satisfied her, letting her understand, as it was true, that they did but only enter

er into the chamber, and went out again, for the day approached, which would not suffer them to stay longer there, and that she should see them with more conveniency the night following: This hope contented and disquieted her at the same time, for when one approacheth the possession of a benefit, they desire it with more violence, so much as they better know the value thereof, and also presume that there is no more trouble to attain it. This night so impatiently expected being come, in the greatest silence thereof, *Frederick* and *Fenise* entred into their Cave, with a staff they knocked softly under the table that covered the mouth of the Mine, to let them know that they were there, and to know if they might enter, at the same instant they saw appear *Magdelene* and *Leonor* with a light, who stretched out their arms to them, crying for joy, and pitying the pains that this Father and Lover had taken for their sakes; necessity, which is the mother of invention, taught *Fenise* to knock nails into the planks they had brought to serve for a ladder, to mount to the center of his affections, he made *Frederick* passe the first, he climbing to assist him, because his age took away his agility. It is impossible to expresse here the joy of these four persons, and particularly of *Magdelene* and *Fenise*; she did not know whom she should embrace first, her Father, or her Lover; blond counselled her to go to the one, and love to the other; but after having suffered this little combate in spirit, as most wise and discreet, she cast her self upon her knees before her Father, and held his knees imbraced long time, and in the interim courteously cast her eyes upon glorious

Fenise who commended the action of his mistress, as testifying an acknowledgment of the obligations she had to this venerable old man who had suffered himselfe to be a slave to many yeares for the love of her. *Frederick* had enjoyed longer time, the ravishing imbracements of his daughter, if *Fenise* had not beene present, but desiring he should partake of his contentment, he made *Magdelene* rise and presented her to our Cavalier. He wanted not much at that time of prostrating himselfe, upon the earth to adore her, for she was so shining with attractions of beauty and joy, which is the most excellent paint, and which had given her complexion so lively a luster, that he believed he saw a goddesse before him. She came towards him with a grave modestie, and *Fenise* saluted her withal the respect & reverence she merited; having rendered her this homage, he ran to embrace *Leonor*, to whom *Frederick* had made his complement, they held no superfluous discourse for feare of losing time which was so deere to them. *Fenise* would willingly have exaggerated his passion, and testified his Eloquence in this action, but it behoved him to leave amorous devises, and to discourse upon the meanes to finish that which they had so happily begun; their resolution was to dispose their flight for the third night after, and that *Magdelene* and *Leonor* should disguise themselves in Turkish habits which *Fenise* should bring them, who charged himselfe with that diligence, and all others that should be necessary for the stealing of them away. Vpon this determination, they begun their embracements and teares, and tooke leave one of another to dispose of themselves to finish the work they

they had so well begun; whosoever had diligently held the countenances of *Magdelene* & *Leonor* might well have observed the secret joy of their hearts.

The King seeing the time approach that he had given *Magdelene* to resolve to content to his will, visited her more often then ordinary, thinking to learne by her carriage her determination. He came the next day after this deere meeting into her chamber, to see her new lodging, and seeing him arrive, she met him with such cherefullnesse, that the King was astonished at this pleasant change, for he never saw her before but with teares in her eyes, and sighes in her mouth. He knew not to what to attribute these gracious actions, whether to the feare she had to see her father suffer as he had threatened, or her sensiblenesse of the honour he intended to doe her in taking her for his wife. But without examining more curiously the originall of this alteration, he was infinitely satisfied, as well with her good reception as charming entertainment: for there is no creature in the world so proper to make a deception as a woman.

The King being retired, believing that he had won her heart and affections, and that she was disposed to accomplish his desires, would testifie unto her the good and profit she should in time receive from his liberalitie. He sent her a box of gold inamelled, wherein there was two bracelets and a garland of Diamonds of very great value. She received them with all her heart in making a thousand humble complements; saying this magnificence was prodigious, seeing that a Lord and master made presents to his slave. *Leonor* felt also the good humour of the King, she had for her part a chaine of pearle which

which was not of much lesse value then the gift he had made to *Magdelene*.

All things hapened as happily as they could wish for. *Fortune* who had bin so contrary to them, and who had proved their courages upon a thousand occasions, then treated them most courteously and shewed her selfe favourable upon all occasions. At that time she conducted to the port of *Algier* two vessells of Pirats, who used no other exercise, but rob upon the sea all the vessells they could render themselves masters of, sharing their booty with the King *Selin*. The one of these pirats was called *Roustan* and the other *Nazouf*. *Fenise* being informed of their arrivall, made a designe to serve himselfe of the ship of *Nazouf* to steale away the captives; for this purpose he suborned with silver two Moores which came with this Pirate, and made them declare upon oath, that *Nazouf* defrauded daily the King of the tribute which was due to him, concealing and hiding the better halfe of the booty which he made at sea, without giving him part as he was bound. Upon this deposition they seized upon the Pirate, and made him prisoner, and thereby his voyage was staycd. *Roustan* which was the head of the other ship departed immediately to exercise his ordinary trade. *Fenise* visited the ship of *Nazouf*, informed himselfe what armes was therein, of the men that kept it, and of all other things that he judged necessary to his intention.

The terme being come so impatiently desired by our four christians, the night rendered her selfe guilty of their designe, she assembled all her darkneses to warrant them from the danger they might run. *Frederick* and *Fenise* went by the same way they had
traced

traced with so much paine into the chamber of *Leonor*, carrying with them the two turkish habits, wherein it was determined that *Magdelene* and she should cloath themselves as they did. Having hidden in many places of their habits those precious jewells which the King had given them, in the hope he had that *Magdelene* should be his wife; they found themselves ready to leave the the palace, and abandon themselves to the discretion of Fortune. Then without losing time, *Fenise* made but one leape into the floore of the mine, being strong and disposed, to the end he might helpe this feareful troop to descend, who marched under his conduct. *Frederick* descended after him, to whom *Fenise* gave his hand, and a dark lanterne which he held, then he mounted again for fear his mistresse or *Leonor* should hurt themselves; having safely let them downe, he lightly threw himselfe after them and carefully guiding them, they begun their way by these horrible places under ground. They had scarcely passed six or eight paces, when they perceived the earth to fall upon them, as if they should be overthrowne and buried quick, which terrified them very much, not knowing whether they should advance or recule, but they were delivered from this terrible apprehension, by another allarme which was not lesse fearefull. As they begun againe their way, animated by the courage of *Fenise*, which had taken the candle out of the lanterne to see more clearly, the earth fell downe a second time upon their heads, and a man fell before them at their feet crying *Jesus*, the aire he moved in falling put out the candle which *Fenise* carryed. Oh heaven,

what feare ! yet this generous Cavalier was not astonished; it is a dead man said he, let us goe on , and going the first held his mistress by the hand, the others followed. He would have continued his way, and advanced towards the vaulted caves; but *Leonor* made him stay; saying they should assist him that was false, and that it was some christian slave; since that at the very instant of his fall he had called upon the holy name of God: that (that being so as it was very probable) he would helpe them the sooner to their ship, her advice was approved; they helped him to rise, and went on leading him with them, without troubling themselves to interrogate him, contenting themselves to believe he was a christian. They had much incommodity to get out of these caves for want of light not knowing which way to take; at every step they stumbled, and fell one upon the other by reason of the stones and clods of the earth that were under their feet. In the end they got to the house of *Fenise* where *Magdelene* and *Leonor* tooke breath which they had lost by weariness and feare in this terrible passage. *Fenise* begun to approach this slave with a candle in his hand to see who it was they had received unto their company, when he heard a violent knocking at the doore of this house. Feare begun then to seise upon the hearts of the most determined of the company, they looke one upon another without speaking word, or knowing what to resolve. And *Fenise* seeing that the blowes doubled, animated his resolution, and went to see who knocked so impatiently at his doore: he knew that it was the slave favourite to *Mahomet*, who prayed him from his master to come presently

presently to him, for an affaire wherein diligence was so necessary, that it would save him his life. *Fenise* sent away the slave assuring him that he would presently follow him.

This newes troubled our Cavalier more then all the passed alarmes had done, on one side, he was called to the succour of his friend and benefactor, and on the other side he was retained by his passion and honour not to abandon the troope that had no hope but in his assistance.

Then he feared that as soon as day should appear *Magdelenes* flight would be perceived in the Kings lodging. In fine, he found means to perform the one and the other obligation, hee armed the two women, as *Frederick* already was, with Carabines and Cymitars, and left his lodging, taking what hee had the most precious, of silver and jewels and the most easie to carry, and carryed them to the vessell of *Nazouf*, as faigning to give them in guard, by the Kings commandement, untill that *Nazouf* who was prisoner, should be convinced or justified of the accusation he was charged with, advertising them that as soon as hee had seen *Mabomet* he would returne to them, and put them to sea, as they went to execute this project, they saw the same slave come running to them, conjuring *Fenise* to make hast, otherwise his Maister was lost. So that seeing himself thus pressed, he broke the determination which he had taken, and went to the lodging of *Mabomet*, taking with him these four persons, letting the slave know that they were men of confidence and valour wherewith he was accompanied to serve *Mabomet* in case of need;
being

being arrived at the door, *Fenise* made his company attend at a mean distance, whilst he went to speak to the *Bacha*: Hee found him at the entry of his house, and by a very short discourse, let *Fenise* know the pain he was in; Deare friend, sayd he, I am falne into a misfortune, wherein I have need of the assistance of a man of valour and loyalty as you are, to helpe mee to save my life. It is the merit of this faire Christian here (shewing him *Eufemie* which accompanied him) which hath obliged me to an action wherewith the King will be offended: She hath been a long time persecuted by the passion of a Moore cosen to the King, to adhere to his sensualities, and although shee hath often prayed him to desist from these importunities, and impertinent pursuities, he forbore not to goe on. This insolent would try his good fortune, and to the contempt of my respect, is entered into my house by the means of a servant which he had gained, to the end to obtain what he desired of *Eufemie*, or else to render her some notorious displeasure. And I knowing her innocence, and the rashnesse of this Moore, I surprised him as he put the first foot into the chamber of this fair one, and have made him finde in the same place the last step of his life, his body is hidden, but this Homicide will be discovered, as soon as it shall be day. The King will not pardon me, since that I have violated the respect due to his blood, whereof he is proudly jealous. These considerations hinder mee now from reasoning, and looking after means to warrant me from the danger

ger wherein I am; therefore I have recourse to your good wit, and cast my selfe into your armes with this Christian Lady to assist me with your counsell, and generous effects. *Fenise* having heard this discourse, setting aside complements, told him, that he must put *Eusemis* into mans apparell; *Mabomet* did it incontinently; then seising upon many stones, and a good quantity of sequines, with the aide and assistance of his faithfull slave which he tooke with them, he abandoned himself to the faith and conduct of *Fenise*.

They went together to get the gate open, where they stood in need of no small credit; for there is a marvellous care observed in keeping the gates of this Town, but the Officers and Porters knowing the *Bacha* and *Subbacha*, believed that they were going to execute some command of the Kings, as they told them, they were going to seise upon a great booty, which *Nazouf* had concealed, with design to frustrate the King of his right, and for this cause they took with them these men which accompanied them, and particularly this slave, which knew where the riches were hidden; in saying so, they shewed him that fell into the Mine. This dissimulation agreed very well with the imprisonment of *Nazouf*, which every one already knew, so that the gate was freely opened unto them, besides *Mabomet* being the Kings favourite, they durst not doubt of what he said. The *Bacha* being out of the Town (whereof the gate was incontinently shut after them) took notice of the company which were with *Fenise*, fearing that so great a number might cause some confusion in their enterprise; he prayed
our

our Cavalier to rid himself of these people, and send them back againe ; but *Fenise* assured him of them, and prayed him to take care for nothing, but to follow him and confide in him, and in those that accompanied him. Thereupon they came near the vessell, *Fenise* called to those that guarded it ; for he had informed himself of their names when he visited it; presently *Fenise* and his unknown troope entered, which were courteously received by the Mariners, if there can be any courtesie amongst those people. They were scarcely entred, when by the ayd and intelligence of some of those of the ship, which *Fenise* had gained, or rather suborned with money and fair promises, they seized upon all the Moores which were in the ship, and disarmed them, they loosed the captives which were at the oares, and put the Moores in their places, making them also to prove the strange changes of fortune. This being done, without provision of victuals or arms, but what they found in the ship ; *Fenise* cut the cord that held the vessell to the port, and by force of arms they got out of the shallow roade into the main sea. The women were put into the best room of the vessell, where they entertained themselves with their prodigious adventures, their long captivity, and the hopes they had shortly to see again their dear country *Spaine*, and there to enjoy the sweet repose of life. In the interim *Fenise*, *Frederick*, and *Mabomet*, with the two slaves, that is to say, he they found in the Mine, & he belonging to *Mabomet* which he had brought with him, being guilty of the death of the King of *Algiers* cosen, were all upon the watch, as well to see

see if they were followed, as to make the Moores, whom they had chained, to row with all their force, that they might get away the sooner. The day being come, *Fenise* regarding all those in the vessell, considered the fashion and carriage of the slave of the Mine, admiring that his fortune had served her self of so strange a means to give him his liberty; by considering of him, he judged him to be of some noble birth, and in this imagination, he came to him, praying him to content his curiosity, and let him know how he had been taken by these Barbarians, and made slave, and by what happy accident he was falne into the mine there to finde his liberty. Then this unknown, with a modest smile, testifying his willingnesse to satisfie the desire of *Fenise*, begunne his history with this honest Complement, speaking in the *Castilian* tongue.

Generous Cavalier, I would willingly beseech you to dispence with me for this obedience, the recitall you command me to make, requireth so much patience and time to hear it, and there are so many sad and tragique accidents therein, that I am affraid you will be much troubled before I shall be at the middle thereof, or that the end will make you extremely melancholique. Yet since it is your pleasure, I will begin this sad discourse, to finish it when you command me silence.

THE HISTORIE OF DON JAME

There is a famous and rich Town in the Kingdom of Catalogne, called *Leride*. It pleased Heaven about twenty four years agoe to let me be born there, of a noble Family, and of good reputation; the greatest part of those who are far from their Country speak in this manner of their extractions, although very often one may know their lying; but whosoever will inform himself of my Line, when we shall arrive at the Port, if God conduct us thither, shall finde my words true. The excesses of youth, which very few men escape, carried away my Father to lascivious affections, from whence I had a bastard Brother; he was of appearance good enough, but of ill effects. My Father caused him to be brought very young into the arms of my Mother, to bring him up, which was an action more rash then civill. She was more charitable then she ought to have been, for Wives sometimes are guilty of the faults of their Husbands, not that they love them, but because in supporting their first debauches, they give occasion for seconds. She took as great care to bring him up as if he had been her proper child; nevertheless she loved him but as a stranger. I had some few years more then he, but although I was in an age of innocence, I was as indifferent to my Father as if I had not been his child, or to say better, as odious to see as an enemy: There are Fathers that have lesse humanity then

then savage beasts; he loved *Lucian* as much as he hated me, this was the name of this bastard brother; I cannot better exaggerate the affection which he bore him, then in saying so. We had a Sister which was a little younger then we, but advantagiously fair, and we were all three brought up at the same place, our Fathers house. During our infancy, *Lucian* and I were almost alwayes in debate, but being but for slight things, our dissentions were incontinently appeased, sometimes for feare of our Father, and sometimes for fear of being punished by those who had care of our educations. But when we had attained to the age of twenty yeares, he became more audacious, and I more cholerick; he envied the demonstrations of amity which my mother used towards me, and I was as envious of the affection my Father bore him; these favours gave him a licentious liberty, liberty boldnesse, and boldnesse insolence to doe so many evill actions, that he got the reputation of a most perfidious and infamous person; he had no other exercise then to ruin the honours of those he could meet with, for whether their simplicities suffered him to surprize them, or that they resisted his dishonest desires, he did not forbear to slander them; his tongue was so dangerous, that he spake ill indifferently of all women, publishing as soon lies as truths, and vaunting of that which he did not, as well as of that which he did. The disorders of his life mounted to such an excesse, that he had a design to enterprize upon the honour of his owne Sister, the sacred limits of blood, her proper vertue, nor my vigilant care, could not retain him; I was advertised of his pernicious

icious project by a servant whom he thought to have rendred adherent to his abominable intentions, because she had suffered him to communicate them unto her; but this was a discreet Maid, who had given him this audience, but only that he might confide in her, and hinder him from seeking to another, who it might be would not have carried her self so discreetly therein. She did but hear him to learn his resolutions, and give me notice thereof, that I might prudently prevent them. When this Maid had told me what she knew thereof, I could scarcely believe her, the thing was so prodigious; but considering the manners of the person, and comparing them with the discourse of this Maid, I found he was capable to commit actions yet more monstrous. I would be wise in this affair, and inform my self of the truth, to the end that the vengeance I hoped to take, might be esteemed just, and not rash. From that hour mine eyes were Sentinels over the words and actions of *Lucian*; he made no step, nor ever approached near the place where *Olinde* was, so mine innocent Sister was called, that I did not discreetly watch him, from whence I found more confirmation of the truth of the report which was made me then I would have done; yet I dissembled the trouble of my mind, with intention to govern my self with such industry, that at the same time his designs should be broken, my Sister delivered from his persecutions, his impudence chastised, my vengeance accomplished, and my self without feare of being known for the Author of his death. I disguised my self in the night, and followed him when he went about the streets,

to attrap him all alone, and let him fee the violence of my choler, in killing him. One time amongst others, when I went to search him with this designe, after having long time walked about the Town, and the places of debauches, where I knew he ordinarily frequented, without meeting with him, in entring into the street where the house of *Don Ignigo Orozco* is situate, one of the principall Cavaliers of the City, I heard a confused noyse of voices; I went towards this house, and knew that it was there where the rumour was, but yet I knew not what was the cause thereof at the same time. I saw two men unknowu, which approached as I did with like curiosity; I came to the doore, and perceived the house all within to be on fire, which did not only threaten to consume the Edifice, but also the goods and persons which were therein, and all this misfortune came by the negligence of a Lacquey, who had fastned a candle against a wooden seeling.

From moment to moment the flames augmented with so much fury that some of the men were constrained to leap out of the windowes, seeing the stairs on fire; the women being lesse couragious, stayed besieged in their chambers, crying for mercy, and causing great pittty to those who heard them. Amongst the rest which suffered these fears, I perceived through the flames and smoak, a Lady, whose beauty and cloaths testified her to be a person of esteeme; and seeing the extreame necessity which pressed them, I cast my self into the house, and taking a great hammer from a man that I met, which

P

was

was come to give succour, I broke a thin wall and entered into the chamber where the poore desolates were, amongst the which I saw saw the originall of my first admiration, which was in a swoond, I tooke her in mine armes, and carryed her out of this fearefull danger which threatened her, making all the rest which were prisoners with her to come out. As this accident hapned, during the first sleepe of the whole family, this lady was wakened in a fright, and being presently cast into the floore, was not clothed but onely with a petticoate and wast coate, the one of sattin richly embroydered with flowers of gold and silver, and the other pinked, through the which appeared a breast of snow capable to inflame ice it selfe. Seeing her so little covered, I cast my cloake over her body. I doe not know whether it was to keepe her warme; or for feare she should inflame the heart of some other as she had done mine, for what marble could have beene insensible of so many attractions? As I carried her away being yet in her swoond, those two men which I met in coming to the dore, came to me with their swords in their hands, and one of them who had his face covered with cipres, because he would not be known, put himself in action to ravish from me the conquest which I had made with so much courage, and to take from me the worthy object of my loue. In this violence seeing my selfe without my sword; which I had quitted having no use thereof against the fire, I knew not what to doe, but to use words, and represent to them, that their enterprise was not onely incivill, but very cowardly and infamous, to set upon a man without armes, and

and in saving a lady of her condition from the fire. The other woman which accompanied her, alarmed with this insolence begun to cry for helpe, then the companion of him that had set upon me in the cypres maske gave me a great thrust in the right side which passed quite through my body, then turning his face he fled with the other, I would have run after them, but the blood which issued in abundance out of the wound rendered me so feeble that I fell downe at the second step. In the interim this lady returned from her swoound much more vigorous then before, having two soules for one, for I had given her mine. Yet she was like to dye for feare, opening her eyes, and seeing a man whose face all covered with blood, and whose habies testified that he was not of base condition. Whilst she was in this new astonishment, the master and servants of a neighbouring house came out, some to helpe this lady, and others to assist to quench the fire: which whilst they did, the others carried away this beauty to their house with one of her fellows which accompanied her. At the same instant Don Jernigo was told of the disaster which was arrived me in saving from the fire, the most pretious goods of his house; And without knowing who I was, he ran presently to cause me to be succoured, having knowne me, he had his heart seized with extreme sorrow, seeing that this misfortune came by reason of the good office I had rendered him. He made me incontinently be carried to my lodging, accompanying me, & protesting to revenge me rigorously if he could discover the infamous culpable,

P 2

finding

finding himselte extreamely interess'd in the offence. As soon as they begun to look to my wounds, *Lucian* arriv'd faining to be extreamely afflicted for my misfortune, he inform'd himselve of whom I had received this injury, promising to imploy his life to be revenged of them. There were so skilfull operators about this cure that in a few dayes I was perfectly healed, for the blow did not offend any inward part, nor entred much within the body; the servant which had given me the first notice of the pernicious projects of *Lucian*, seeing me ready to go abroad, came to me into my chamber telling me that she had a new secret to communicate to me: and after she was assured that no body could hear her, she held me this discourse, speaking softly. Sir said she, I should esteeme my selfe confederate with your enemies, if after having discovered a conspiracy they have made against you, I should not advertise you thereof; herein you shall know how much I esteeme the conservation of your person, as you have already made prooffe of the respect I beare to your honour in what I have heretofore told you. You must know then, that the night after you were hurt, about twelve a clock, I heard a talking in the chamber of *Lucian* by reason of some indisposition I had which would not suffer me to sleepe, I arose and put my head to my window (which you know looketh into the court over against that of *Lucian*, which hath the same view but a little lower then mine) I could easily see thogough the glasse what they did there, because there was a light. I saw there was ashes upon the table, and that with the end of a flat stick he made cleane his sword, full of
certain

certaine rusty spots, and in doing thereof, I heard him hold this discourse to *Fabrice*, the man that serveth him, and whom he trusteth with his incestuous designs, since that which we did the last night, there are two things which trouble my spirit. The first, that mine arme had no more force nor addresse but to leave in doubt the life of *Don Jame*, that was the name I bore when I was happier then I now am.

Scarcely was this name spoken, when faire *Leonor* which heard it, and who being at the dore of the chamber of the poope had also heard the beginning of this recitall, came with her armes open & cast them about the neck of *Don Jame*, ah, my deere husband, said she, in crying out, it is possible that thou art this day so neere me? he knowing the voice and countenance of her that spoke; Ah God! is it you my deare *Leonor*? saying so he imbraced her reciprocally, and they remained fastened together without being able to speake any more. They were so ravished with joy, that they wanted not much of giving up their soules in this transport. After a good space of time, they opened their armes, and beheld one another with teares in their eyes, *Don Jame* to dissemble his, indeavoured to reprove those of *Leonor*, telling her that those that weepe for joy, ought to have no teares for their troubles. All those that saw these amorous actions, marvelled at this prodigious encounter, which gave *Fenise* the more curiositie to know the end of the history begun, the which *Don Jame* (having reunited his spirits moved with the suddain apparition of this Angell) continued thus

The second discontent which troubleth me, said *Lucian*, is that thou couldest not steale away *Leonor* the Neece of *Don Ignigo*, whom I thought to have kept in some secret place as a stranger and a very fair Maide. I thought to have come to the end of my design in despite of her and her resistance. See Sir, what insolent words: If we should have stolne her away, answered *Fabrice*, I believe that you would not have received thereby much pleasure; for I do not know how one can finde it, where there is no correspondence in desires, nor that one can exercise such rigour upon a beauty, who is seen with tears in her eyes to lament the losse of her honour. Pity, then answered *Lucian*, hath hindered thee from satisfying my will. *Fabrice* made excuses which *Lucian* received for that time; yet propounding to himselfe to search occasion to accomplish his rash designe, as far as to take the boldnesse to entreat an unseasonable houre into the house where *Leonor* should be, although he should be forced to scale the window of her chamber, or force the door. *Fabrice* answered him nothing, it may be not approving what his Maister said, as being too rash and dangerous to execute: From whence it happened that two daies after, this unfortunate confident was found dead, with three stabs of a poynard in the breast, which I presume was given him by the hand of *Lucian*, through rage and revenge, as well for the cowardlinesse wherewith he accused him, as seeing him not disposed to assist him in the last proposition which he had made. Since your growing well I have observed his disquietnesse, as being troubled therewith, and lately knowing

knowing that you begun to rise and walk in your chamber, he stamped upon the ground, and lifted his eyes to Heaven, as if he had made some secret threats. But yesterday he came to me, and made me this discourse. *Glicere*, sayd he, thou art not ignorant of the damage I received in the recovery of *Don Iame*, since that the effect of my desires is thereby stayed, and extreemly delayed; his presence hinders me from satisfying the passion I have for *Olinde*, in enjoying her beauty, I doe not say her love, though I have alwaies perceived that she hath loved me as a brother, but at the present I am as odious to her as an enemy, which maketh me at this time to be pricked on as much with vengeance as love, and that I seek to content my desires to satisfy the one and the other passion. For this cause I have recourse to thee, having already communicated unto thee my secrets, that thou mayst serve me in a new project which I have made, wherein I have need of a most particular confident, which I desire thou shouldest be, assuring thee that thy recompence shall exceed much what thou shalt think to have merited. See here a certain powder, said he, in drawing a paper out of his pocket, which you must make *Don Iame* to swallow amongst his meat, or in some broath, the which wil cause a marvellous effect. He will fall into a languishing, and fall away from day to day, so that in a moneth I shall be rid of him. Doe not fear that any one shall be troubled therefore, the cause of his death will be attributed to his wound, upon the opinion that the Chyrurgeons closed it up too soon. Consider how much this secret imports me; for having de-

clared to thee, if thou deferrest the execution thereof, and that I doe not see the effect of the powder which I put into thy hands in the time that it ought to operate, thy life shall suffer for it, and thou shalt pay for the fault of having disobeyed my will. The impatience I had to get out of the hands of this divell incarnate, obliged me to take the powder which he presented to me, and to assure him of my fidelity, praising God, that he had declared unto me these abominable intentions. Behold this diabolically powder, and I discover nakedly unto you, the damnable enterprises of this wicked man, assuring my self that your wit and prudence, will so ingeniously carry the business, that neither you nor my self run any danger. You ought to be the protector of my life, since that I shew my selfe infidell to this Traytor, for the conservation of yours.

At the end of this discourse I remained so confounded, and so moved against this monster of abominations, that if I had been in case to have risen out of my bed, I had then attempted to doe it, to go find this cursed man, and satisfy my self by his blood. But having passed this first motion of choler, I said to *Glicere*, that since that the effect of this venomous powder was so slow, that she must make him believe that I had taken it, and for my part I would seem to be indisposed, complaining to feele my self fall away every day, and that in the interim I would search means and occasion to catch this piper in the snares which he had layd for me. *Glicere* retired upon this assurance, and I had a desire to give this empoysoner the same venome which
he

had prepared for me; but because the effect thereof was so slow, I feared that he should perceive the double intelligence of *Glicere*, and so his rage might cause him to serve her as he had done *Eabrice*, for not having executed his will; and again, that in taking the preservative against the powder, knowing the composition thereof, he might escape my hands, and finde some other more ready invention to make me perish under his. I determined then to seek some other way to revenge my self, imagining with my selfe, that since that the term was thirty daies, I should finde one, wherein no one but himself should bee in danger. During this long time which I had been deprived of the sight of *Leonor*, my health and love encreased every moment. She who acknowledged her selfe my obliged, for the great service I had done her, wished also to know me, and to testifie her thankfulnesse, she would willingly have sent mee some message, but she was fearfull to be esteemed light, not knowing what judgement I might make of this liberty. After having contended with these irresolutions, she layd all her fears on one side, and her love on another, but the last carried her beyond all considerations. She made me a complement by a maide that served her, excusing her selfe for having been so negligent in sending to enquire of my health. *Lucian* saw her enter into my chamber, and envious of the honour which I received, remembered himself of his first design to ravish *Leonor* in the house of *Don Ignigo*, which made him observe the behaviour and words of the Maide; she afterwards told me, that her Mistresse was extreemly troubled in her
very

Very soule for the evill that was befallne me upon her occasion, and that she would esteeme her selfe extremely happy to know the person to whom she was ingaged for so great a benefit, as that was to have saved her from the fire, and from those that would have ravished her person; in fine that when I should be permitted to goe abroad, if I would take the paines to visit her, I should be very welcome.

These pleasant words ravished my soule by mine cares, mine eyes testified what joy I received thereby, and my tongue answered with courteous words, that the first time I should goe abroad I would not faile to come kisse her hands and receive her commands. Two dayes after I executed this promise, went to salute this ravishing beauty, which heaven hath let mee see againe, this day, either to verify my narration, or to give me an incomparable joy, after three yeares absence. I saw her then at her lodging, I discoursed with her, where I found the excellency of her wit, and gave up my soule to her which she shall possesse as long as it shall be lawfull for me to dispose thereof. In acknowledging my submissions, she was content that I should call her my mistress, keeping alwaies the same respect towards her which I have done in your presence. Yet in time the access which I had to her grew so familiar, that one time I was so charmed with her conversation, and stayed so late with her, that the night surprised us before we thought therof, for being together houres seemed but moments unto us, her Uncle at that time came out of the towne, he had a custome to shut the doore of his house in entring, and to keep the keys
until

untill the next morning, he did the same then, so that it was impossible for me to get out to the great displeasure of *Leonor*, fearing that I might be so rash as to attempt upon her honour, though she might have beene well assured of the reverence I bore her, yet seeing her selfe forced by necessity, she was constrained to suffer me to stay in her chamber untill the time was come I might descend by a cord from a Balcony window which was over the streete; the time came of my departing from her lodging by this way. *Leonor* looked out of a window to see if there no body appeared that might discover me; she perceived two men to stand still in a corner, and told me that I might stay yet a little. She was in perpetuall disquietnesse to get me out, doing nothing but goe and come from the window to the place where I was, and putting her head anew into the street, she saw a third man with the two others, one of them having a lanterne, they approached together, the house of *Don Ignigo*, & stayed at the sellar window, then one of the three begun with a croe of iron, to force and breake the barres of iron wherewith it was shut. whilest the other two kept the watch, looking all about if any one saw them, or if there passed any body that might hinder their enterprize. *Leonor* came presently to advertise me thereof, I came softly to the window, and saw that the grate was broken, & that they put down a ladder into the window, *Leonor* was upon the point of wakening all the household servants, but she was fearesfull I should be discovered, if peradventure the lodging should be searched, and also that finding her in her clothes at this houre, something

thing might be suspected to her disadvantage. Whilst we consulted of what was to be done, wee saw one of these men to descend by the ladder into the cellar, carrying in his hand a dark lanthorne shut, and the other stayed in the street to attend him; then we perswaded our selves that they were not theeves, and attributed this action to love, thinking that it was some servant to one of the Maids of the house: upon this imagination *Leonor* was a little more at quiet, esteeming that (provided that her honour was safe) she ought not to torment her selfe with what others did, so vve took patience without making noise; but presently after vve heard one approach to our chamber, and put a key into the lock; thereupon I put out a candle vvhich vvas within the chimney, to the end I might not be seen by the person vvhich vvas entring, and prayed *Leonor* to take courage, and not to cry out, for if she did, she vould undoe her self and me also. Thereupon the door vvas opened, and vve sawv the same man to enter, that had before gone down into the cellar with his lanthorn; I vvas then hidden under the Tapisstry neare the bed of *Leonor*, vvhether she vvas laid down, vvhether seemed to vvaken in starting, and to be ready to cry out. At the instant this unknowvn came to her, with his face masked, bidding her make no noise, nor awake any one, saying it vvas a robbery of honour vvhich he vould make, and that his love had engaged him to this enterprife.

Leonor sate up, and laid her hands upon his stomach to put him back; no, no, said he, in embracing her, your resistance will serve to no purpose, you must either willingly or unwillingly adhere to my passi-

on, or lose your life : The mask which covered his infamous face, could not so disguise his voice, but that I knew it was *Lucian*, and withall I remembred what *Glicere* had told me, so that full of wrath and indignation I cast my self upon him before he could put himself in defence, or know with whom he had to doe : I plunged the blade of a great ponyard into his breast, wherewith he was so surpris'd and frightned, that without staying for a second blow, he left his hold, and fled to the Balcony window, by the which I was to have gone out, and cast himself down into the street upon the pavement, almost dead with his hurt and fall, and all soyled with his blood. His two companions which attended him, seeing that there was a man fallen from that window, came to see who it was ; and as they returned in the obscurity, they touched the trigger of a pistoll which *Lucian* had hanging at his girdle, and which was so well directed, that it blew two bullets into the head of one of his confederates, which fell downe dead by him, so paying for the charity which he had in being his Scout. The other seeing his companion so ill treated, believed that he which had leaped from the window, had used this stratagem for to kill them both by foul play, so that fearing to have the like misfortune with his Comrade, he fled hastily away.

Seeing things in this estate, and the perill which we ran both of us ; *Leonor*, if it should be discovered that the murder was done in her house, and I being known for the homicide, I resolv'd to warrant my self from all inconveniences, by absenting my self from *Leride*, and taking *Leonor* with me,
for

for after the first fault a hundred others are committed. For this effect I went down from her chamber into the cellar, by which *Lucian* was got in; I went up the ladder into the street, drew it from the window, and fastned it to a cord which *Leonor* threw me from her window; then she fastned it to the crosse bar of the window, which being done, she courageously descended, but we had not taken heed enough of the length, and fastning of the ladder, it wanted six or seven steps of touching the earth, so that *Leonor* fell this distance, and if I had not half received her in mine arms, I believe that the tomb of her youth and life would have been at the foot of this ladder; yet for all my catching her she hurt one of her feet against the pavement, so much that it was impossible for her to goe one step. I leave you to think in what pain I was then; on the one side I had a spectacle of two dead men; on another a house broken; with these I found my self engaged to defend and assist a person which was so dear to me, and to whom I had so many obligations, and yet constrained to warrant my selfe from so many accusations that threatned me. I assure my self that the best wit would have been much confused amongst so many disgraces; for my part, I doe avow that I found my self extreamly amazed, and knew not what to resolve upon: one while I thought that the most convenient remedy for me was to leave *Leride*, but considering that I was unprovided of necessaries for a voyage, I changed my opinion. After a thousand various thoughts, I determined not to stir yet, untill I saw what brute would be published of this strange successe, and as
so

so we thought it expedient that *Leonor* should return into her chamber; the resolution was easie; but the execution very difficile, because of the hurt she had got in falling. I got the ladder again into the window, to the end she might passe by the same way that *Lucian* had made for us: But the poor Lady was extreemly afflicted when she saw that she must goe down a place so foule and slimy; yet seeing that there was a necessity, she took courage, I passed the first, and taking her upon my shoulders, went downe the ladder, and carried her into her chamber; I represented unto her, that she ought not to apprehend any thing, although she should be accused of the death of these two men; on the contrary, this action would be esteemed most glorious, when the occasion should be knowne; nothing more lawfull then to defend life and honour against those that would set upon them. Having thus resolved her, I took leave, and retired my self by the same way I descended. Before I went from this house, I came to the two dead men; I took the pistoll from the girdle of *Lucian*, and put it into his hand, and did the same with the poyniard to the other, to give cause of belief that they had killed one another; the invention succeeded happily enough, since that all that saw them were of that opinion. The Justices having imployed above fifteen dayes to inform themselves of the fact, believed that the dead men had been their own proper murderers. During this time, *Don Igniga*, *Leonor*s Uncle, was taken with an apoplexy, which took him away in lesse then twenty foure houres; and as one misfortune never commeth without company, two dayes
alter

after his death, a Burgois, one of my friends, came to advertise me, that a certain neighbour of *Don Ignigo* was extreamly glad, as well of his decease, as of the occasion which he had to be revenged of his race, since he could be no more of his person, for an ancient injury which he said he had received from him; and after this troublesome beginning, he told him that *Leonor* had been the cause of the murdering of those two men, that she had made them to be slain by a Gentleman that courted her not long ago, and thereupon he named me, not knowing that the Burgois was my friend; that he had seen her descend from the window of her chamber, and me in the street to receive her into mine armes: in brief, finishing all the other particulars of our actions, he continued saying that he was determined to goe and declare it to the Justice, for in so doing he should discharge his conscience, be the cause of the chastisement of the fault, and satisfy his vengeance, which was his principall passion. This Burgois, which knew the interest that I had in this proceeding, prudently shewed him, that he ought to take heed what he enterprised; that he alone would not be believed, and besides he was much to be suspected, and reproachable, since that every one knew the old hatred which he bore to the house of *Don Ignigo* deceased. So it was that he moderated the motion of this accusator, to have leisure to advertise me thereof, and give me time to remedy these threatnings; I thanked him for the good office which he had rendred me, and disguising the truth to him, made him believe that this neighbour was mistaken in me. As soon as this Bur-

gois

gois was gone from my lodging, at the time when the day begun to faile, I went to a Lady which was a friend to *Leonor*, and who knew that I served her, I desired her that she would use meanes that I might see her at her house the next day at the same houre; she promised it me, and performed it exactly. I saw *Leonor*, and told her the evill newes which was told me, and the danger wherein this wicked neighbour pretended to put us, from whence it would be very hard to escape without absenting our selves. For my part, had it not been for her consideration, I had already been out of the Town, and if that she would resolve to follow me, I would warrant her from all perill, retiring our selves into some place where we might live contentedly, having already provided things necessary. But for to give her full assurance of the sincerity of my love, I promised her the faith of marriage, and swore to her never to require the accomplishment of my desires untill my word was executed. Moreover, that her Uncle being deceased, she had more liberty to dispose of her person; and that her absence would not seem very strange, not being of that Country, it might be presumed that she would retire her self into her own, and to her own house.

I employed so many favourable perswasions with those vvherevvith her interiour love solicited her, that she consented to my proposition, under the secret assurances vvich I gave her, calling the Divine Majesty to witnesse, and beseeching it to be revenged upon me at the instant that I should violate them. Having received mine oathes, she promised me to be ready the next day to goe vvither I

Q

vvould

would carry her. In the interim, I provided a good nag for her, and tooke for my selfe an excellent strong German horse, and the houre appointed for our departure being come, which was in the evening, we went alone out of *Leride* without acquainting either man or maide servant; for it is almost a miracle when those people know a secret and doe not reveale it. Wee tooke the way towards *Valence*, and for the first we lodged in a little hamlet out of the way for feare of being knowne, faining to have lost our way, two daies after we arrived in a very faire village by which I had passed before, distant from *Valence* about twenty miles, where we stayed some time, and were as well lodged and received as in our owne country, for with silver Barbarians are tamed, and friends are bought every where; after some time we grew weary with this country conversation; I then had designe to passe into *Castille* and communicated it unto *Leonor*: but she dissuaded me from it by the recitall of the originall of her absence from *Toledo*, and by the hate of any thing that might put her in minde of her brother. We had not yet resolved whither we would goe, when I received letters from that *Burgois* of *Leride*, (to whom before our departure I had discovered the whole truth, of the action befalln in the house of *Don Ignigo*, and who harkened after all things that was said thereof) wherby I learnt that this revengfull neighbour, had declared all that he had seen, but too late for his vengeance, & that they searched after us by horse and foot; this troublesome newes obliged me to leave the kingdome and go into *Sicilie*; I made *Leonor* agree thereunto, to whom countreys
were

were naturall if I was there, yet not telling her what was written unto me, for feare of disquieting her spirit, and changing her good humour. The occasion which invited me to goe into *Sicilie*, was that J had an uncle there, brother to my mother, whose high merits had got him the government of a port there, with whom I hoped to finde security againe those that sought after me, augmentation of my fortunes, and repose, to passe happily my time with *Leonor*. But whosoever grounds his felicity upon temporall things shall alwaies finde himself frustrate of his ends; we were no sooner imbarqued upon the sea, but we found our selves in the hand of pirates, Turkes, who in despite of our resistance, rendered themselves masters of our ship, our liberties and lives.

They carryed us to *Algier*, where we were all separated one from another by the sale they made of our persons, to all those that presented themselves to buy us. I know not what became then of my deer *Leonor*, for me, I was sold to a Turke, one of the chiefeft of the country, who having kept me some time, presented me to *Selin* King of *Algier*, in quality of a slave of ransome, where I dwelt untill this last night, in the middle whereof I heard a noyse in the stable, I arose to see what it was, I found that it was two horses which fought together and furiously bit one another. I came towards them to separate them, for it was my charge, my masters thinking that I was not capable of any other imployment; but the great haste which I made hindered me from taking heed of a great hole which the horses had made with stamping with their feet, J

went to put them in their places, and in going the earth failed under me, and feeling my selfe to fall, I unvoked the sacred name of *Iesus*, by whose merits I have found life in thinking to have falne into a gulfe. Otherwise if I had not pronounced this high name and had recourse to his aide, it may be you had killed me, making me for some Jew, Moore, or Turke; it is then from the vertue of this divine name, that I hold my life, liberty, and the glory to see againe before mine eyes, that deare *Leonora*, alwaies loving, and to whom before you, Gentlemen, I renew the vowes of my service promising her to accomplish when she pleaseth the faith of marriage which I have given her.

At this last word these contented lovers began againe to continue their imbracements, and talke together of their adventures, to the great contentment of the rest of the company, but the pleasures of the one, and of the others, lasted not long. They perceived afar off, a vessell to come towards them, in so great hast, that although they did all their endeavours to avoid it, it was impossible for them, so that it behoved them to quit the instruments of flight, and betake themselves to those of defence. *Mabomet* upon the instant made all the *Turkes* put off their habits, and put them upon those which were habited like slaves, to the end that if the vessell was commanded by some pyrate who was ignorant of their flight, he might let them passe without setting upon them, seeing them all in fashion of *Turkes*, and conducted by him, who might make himselfe knowne. They gave armes to them
who

who had none, that they might not be surpris'd in case that they must fight, as amongst others, to *Don Iame* and the slave of *Mabomet* which he had brought along with him, in whom he much confided, who was named *Charles*, a man of an advantageous proportion, and who seem'd to be courageous. Being then prepared the best they could to sustain the shock, this vessell which they fear'd approach'd them, they presently knew that it was the Pirate *Nazouf*, which came to fall upon them. He had order from *Selin* to imploy all possible industry, for to bring them back alive to *Algier*, as well for to chastise them, the more cruelly with long torments, as also to warrant *Magdelene* from the hurt that might otherwise arive her, which was the cause why *Nazouf* used all his endeavours to board them without using fire, but he found more resistance then he imagin'd. *Mabomet*, *Fenise*, *Don Iame*, and *Charles*, did marvels, they foure alone defended a long time the entrance of their vessell: *Frederick* and the other captives which were in the vessell of *Nazouf*, when *Fenise* made himseife master thereof, testified also much courage. The vessells were fastened together, & the heat of the combat, made the combatants of the one and the other vessell, passe it without thinking thereof, so that they were together pel mell, when they perceiv'd another ship, who seeing them together came so near them, that all of them easily knew it. This was the ship of *Roustan*, which we have heretofore told you departed from *Algier*, when *Fenise* took that of *Nazouf*, and arrested him prisoner; *Roustan* was therein in person, who being

known by both parties, was at the same time called by *Mabomet*, and by *Nazouf* to help them, being well assured that the party which he tooke would carry the victory. *Nazouf* cryed out to him on one side, that they had betrayed the King, and that they were fugitives; that *Selin* his Lord had chosen him to follow after them, being much interessed in his own particular, honour, and goods, that he might use more care & diligence to take them. *Mabomet* and *Fenise* cryed out to him on the other side, that *Nazouf* had deceived the King, and that they were sent to take him again, he having violated his prison, and saved himselfe for fear of the punishment which he deserved; that he was a deceiver, and used this artifice to oblige him to assist him, and that he had best take heed of lending his hand to him, if he would not be declared a criminall to his Majesty. These last words had so much power over *Roustan*, that having considered the authority of those who spoke them, to whose offices belonged this action which they did; he regarded no more the reasons of *Nazouf*, on the contrary he boarded his vessell, and cryed to him that he should render himself, as the rest also did which accompanied him; so that these confused voices, amazed and troubled so much the spirit of poore *Nazouf*, that without any further resistance, he was constrained to yeeld and give up his arms. Thereupon *Mabomet* and *Fenise* leaped into his vessell, saying that he must passe into theirs, that they might be the better assured of his person. *Nazouf* would not, seeming to be halfe mad at the foule play which was played
him

him, not being able to defend himselfe therefrom, nor so much as to make it known. *Roustan* seeing these violent contestations, saw that he was obliged to tell them that he would put him into his, which was instantly executed, contrary to the will of *Fenise*, who nevertheless durst not contradict it, for fear of giving some shadow to *Roustan*. Our Cavalier would willingly have had *Nazouf* under his hands, to have diminished the forces of his adversaries, but it was necessary for him to dissemble his discontent. Part of those who accompanied *Fenise* were very glad of the happy successe of the stratagem, the rest were in care how to finde means to separate themselves from *Roustan*, which pressed them all to return to *Algier*. *Nazouf* consented willingly to the effects of this proposition, but *Mabomet* which feared the execution thereof, found an invention to tell him, that hee must before visit a little Isle where the Pirate *Nazouf* had hidden the booty which he would deceive the King of. Thereupon *Charles* his slave came to him, praying him to joyn his ship to that of *Roustans*, that hee might leape nimbly thereinto and ponyard him. This resolution did not seeme impertinent to *Mabomet*, judging, that if *Charles* could bring it about, they might easily render themselves Masters of the vessell, forasmuch as there was no other conductor. But as they were about to execute this conspiracy, they discovered a Galley of *Malta*, as soon as the Crosse was perceived by these Barbarians, a cold fear glided into their veines, which made them tremble; for (forasmuch as they are slaves to the devill) they

tremble at the sight of the Crosse. *Fenise* and *Don Iame* faigned to be moved therewith, and to be in fear of meeting them ; but in their soules they were ravished with joy, seeing that this was the happy sign of their good fortune. *Mabomet* made a shew of fighting with this Galley, reanimating the courage of *Roustan*, who considering the great booty they might make, being three vessels against one, took againe his spirits which were strayed, with the apprehension he had, and disposed himself to attach this Galley. Who would not be astonished to see the force of covetousnesse upon the soules of these Barbarian Pirates, where the love of riches hath greater power, than the feare of losing their lives ? Behold them then ready to goe against this Galley, but with designs much different. They put before them the Ship wherein *Nazouf* was come, and the generous and brave Knights of *Malta*, seeing that they were Turkish vessels, prepared themselves to give them a brave reception, although they knew their force to be far inferiour, as well because of their three vessels, as of the great number of Barbarians which exceeded theirs, but their courages and valour supplied this inequality. As soon as they saw them approach within Cannon shot, the *Maltans* gave them a salute with two of their greatest pieces, which incontinently sunk their first vessell. Then *Fenise* tooke away their Turkish colours, where the Crescents and Halfe-Moones were, and put in their places Christian colours (as the Turks do sometimes to deceive the christians when they meet them upon their coasts) and

ad-

adding to this signe the *Castalian* tongue, wherein they implored the grace & assistance of these knights, they made the effect of their artillery to cease. So that when *Roustan* knew the fault which he had committed, in not believing *Nazouf*, it was impossible for him to fly, or for to defend himselfe.

Seeing himself in this extreamity, and to take away the glory from the Knights of triumphing in his taking, and to exempt himselfe from the paine which he might receive in their hands, he commanded the bottom of his vessell to be pierced, and by little and little it made a hole into the sea in the presence of the *Maltans*, rather chusing to lose his goods and life, than to see himselfe a slave to those who had been at his mercy, if he would have believed *Nazouf*.

The Knights were very sorry for the losse of this Conquest, but this sadnesse was lost in the joy which he received who commanded the Galley, when he knew *Don Iame* his Nephew. This was that Uncle that he thought to have found in *Sicily*, as it hath been already sayd, who being newly honoured with the Knights of Saint *Iohn*, went from *Malta* to *Cartagene* for an affaire of great importance. *Don Iame* extreamly glad of this good fortune, after having embraced the knees of his Uncle, named those to him in whose company he was. *Fenise* and *Frederick* saluted him, and after a thousand actions of Grace, and as many testimonies of a generous rejoycing, they all entred into the Galley, and went to *Cartagene*, as well because it was
the

the Port whither this Gally tended, as also not to be separated from the Knights that had delivered them from so notable a perill, because they feared to meet other dangers, from which they could not escape being alone.

The End of the Third Booke.

THE



THE
FOURTH BOOK
OF
F E N I S E.

THE Galley of the Knights of *Melita* took Port most happily at *Cartagene*, to the great pleasure of all that were therein, and particularly of *Frederick*, because he expected to there to see againe a person with whom he hoped to finde consolation the rest of his dayes; he also rejoyced, that he had brought againe his dear Daughter to the place of her birth, and to see her served by *Fenise*, whom he esteemed to bee one of the most accomplished Cavaliers of his Nation; and for that cause agreed with all his heart to the honest designs which he had for her. *Leonor* was also most contented, to finde herself out of slavery, and near
Don

Don Iame, as passionately in love with her as in the beginning of their affections. *Mabomet* on his side thought himselfe most happy to see himselfe in a country where he might easily performe the intention he had to become Christian and also to satisfie his desires in marrying *Eusemie*. She also thought her self much bound unto him, for his honest proceedings towards her whilest she was under his power. In brieft every one of them was perfectly glad to be so miraculously escaped from the tyranny of the Barbarians, even *Charles* the slave of *Mabomet* felt his part of this felicitie, seeing himselfe honoured and esteemed by all, as well for his generous actions as for the advantages which nature had put upon his countenance, which made him suspected to be of other birth, then what he had reported. They were all so strongly bound together in affection that they found their separation extreamely troublesome. The generous *Frederick*, considering that his house was spacious enough to receive them, invited them thereunto to repose themselves as long as they pleased. All those that could habited themselves after the Spanish fashion doing it before they came out of the vessell, for feare of being overthrowne by the curiositie of the vulgar. The liberalitie of the knights was showne in this action in giving clothes to those who had need thereof. Every one of them as they descended kissed the earth of their deare country, they imbraced one another, all acknowledging themselves to owe their liberty to the wit and courage of *Fenise*, who with courteous complements thanked *Frederick* for the favour which he offered them, but was of advice that since that it
was

was night that they might lodge together in an Inne, as strangers, that they might accomodate themselves the next day with all things necessary, to be civilly cloathed before they made themselves knowne; besides it was expedient to informe themselves secretly of their proper affaires after so long absence. This proposition was approved by all the company, who tooke their leaves of the Uncle of *Don Jame*, assuring the other knights, that they would send them the next day the cloathes which they had lent them; they left them their vessell to dispose of as they should think good, and having taken out their coffers and boxes wherein were the Jewels and other things, the most precious which were brought by *Magdelene, Leonor, Eufemie, & Mabo-*met, they went to that Inne which was nearest the port. The next day every one accomodated himselfe with what he had neede of, and the night being come, *Frederick* prayed *Fenise* to doe him the honour to accompany him to his house, and under pret ext of demanding newes of a Cavalier his kinsman, see if they could know him. In entering into the streete he perceived some people who were before his house, he approached, and saw great light in the roomes which appeared through the windows, and also many persons which vvent in and out moved vvith joy. Then *Frederick* regarded *Fenise* vvithout speaking a word, being extremely astonished from whence these testimonies of rejoycing should proceed, and desiring to be cleared therein, he informed himselfe by a man which came out of the house vvithout a cloake, and who had the fashion to be one of the domestiques. You know

know very little answered he, if you bee ignorant, that the Widow of *Seigneur Frederick* is married again to day, since she is a Lady of great renown. Saying so, he briskly passed by, leaving *Don Frederick* in greater confusion than before. Then turning himselfe towards *Fenise*; Deare Friend, said he, what doe you think of this answer? Is it possible that he speaketh truth? I doubt not of it, replied *Fenise*, nor you ought not to thinke it strange; for after an absence of fiftene years, which are passed since you were heard of, it is believed you are dead. I do not so much marvell at this accident, as I am troubled with the trouble we shall presently bring to the Feast, when you shall make your self known, which we must go about to do wisely and promptly, for feare of a great disorder. You have more cause to praise *Persinde* than to blame her, since that she might have done this action sooner, without any scruple of conscience, and having attended untill this time, she hath given you leasure to come to oppose the last execution. *Frederick* approving these judicious reasons, although he had his spirit much confused; they entred into the hall where the assembly was, covering their faces, to see secretly the countenance of the future Bride, and to know him which pretended to enter into the place of *Frederick*, they put themselves into a corner, standing upon a bench, where certain people looked over the heads of others. The first persons that *Fenise* cast his eyes upon, as being in the place most eminent, was *Don Louis* his dear friend, he who was the unknown sonne of *Frederick*, and *Leonard* brother of *Eufemie* the Cavalier, with whom
he

he had made friendship, after they had fought together near *Valence*, as we have said before in the first book. They were near the one to the other, and with a Cavalier which *Fenise* could not see well enough to know, but whom he judged to be of great condition, as well by his rich habits, as also because he took place of the other two. *Frederick* nor *Fenise* knew not which was the pretended Bridegroom, they demanded of one of those that was mounted upon the bench near, who being as ignorant as they, shewed them *Don Lovis*, saying that it was he, and that he was a stranger. *Fenise* was much astonished at this prodigious encounter, yet scarcely believed what this man had told him, because of the inequality of their ages; for he could not have more than twenty six yeares, and the woman might not onely have been his mother after the common manner of speaking, but was indeed truly so. Then he made a new experience of the vertue of Gold, which makes conformity amongst things where there is no proportion. In the interim *Frederick* ignorant of the thoughts of *Fenise*, raised himself upon his toes, attempting to see the pretended Widow, he saw a troope of Ladies set in a circle, but he could not distinguish his wife, because they were all so brave and shining with stones, when casting his eyes upon him they sayd should be her husband, he was astonished at his great youth; the more he considered all these things, the more he was filled with confusion; yet he said nothing, leaving the conduct of this affair to the prudence of *Fenise*, his spirit was moved with a thousand several propositions which he made to himselfe, to

re-

resolve how he should govern himselfe to declare the lawfull impediment of this Marriage, without being the cause of some great dissention, which seemed to be inevitable in this businesse. In the end he found an invention to doe it without scandall. He turned towards *Frederick*, and told him, that for to make this enterprise proceed happily, he would advise him to return to the Inne, to fetch the three Ladies who were there, making them take their best attires, and put their Mants upon them, (that is a great vail which the women have in *Spain*, which they carry upon their heads, which covereth all their bodies unto their heels;) also to pray *Don Jame*, and *Don Geronime* to accompany them, and if they would, to bring *Charles* with them, being of their company, and in the Interim he would have a care to hinder the solemnity of the Marriage, if they went about it whilst he made this little voyage. *Frederick*, who had no other will but that of *Fenise*, whom he knew to be as much affectionated to his interests, as himselfe, went incontinently to satisfie his desire.

Fenise seeing himself alone, would do an action of gallantry, which is esteemed in *Spaine* upon such occasions: he glided behind the spectators, and came to the Violins, prayed them to look to his cloak and sword; then he put a piece of cypresse before his face, entred into the middle of the Hall, and inviting the future Bride to dance, who did not refuse him, although he was unknown, caused a Galliard to be sounded, where he made himselfe admired in many things; for besides his being well clothed, his proportion, disposition, and action in
this

this exercise, ravished the eyes and affections of all the Assembly, who died with desire to know who he was; at the end of the dance he let fall industriously his cypresse, as if it had been against his will, and presently *Don Louis* knew him. Never man had greater excess of joy without losing his life then this Cavalier then had; his speech failed him, but his arms expressed his gladness, he ran to embrace him, and held him locked unto his neck, untill *Leonard*, who also knew him, came to take part of his contentment, testifying that he was almost angry that he had not possessed this felicity the first. *Don Fenise* knew not which of them to welcome the better, he looked upon them, and imbraced them both at the same time, making them the most courteous and amiable demonstrations his heart could invent. After all these actions, he took them out of the middle of the Hall, and whilst the other Cavaliers and Dames of the Assembly were moved with this joy, and deviling together, endeavouring to divine who it should be; he spoke and testified to these two friends the astonishment which he had to finde them so happily at *Cartagene*, and at the hour of his arrivall, at Feasts, and Nuptiall Solemnities, which he esteemed (said he) as prodigious as joyfull, for he yet believed that *Don Louis* was to marry her who brought him into the World. To bring in the discourse which he had to hold him, he prayed *Leonard* to permit him to entertaine *Don Louis* in particular, and when he was retired, he made him this discourse. I believe that you are not ignorant that you are in the house of your Father; this is it that hath given me an impatient desire to know by

R

what

what meanes you came to the knowledge thereof. At these words *Don Louis* made a gesture of admiration, which was followed with this discourse. My dear *Fenise*, that which you tell me, filleth me with as great astonishment, as your presence with joy, so that although we have neither place nor time proper to make long discourses, yet I have so great a desire to heare you explicate your self more clearly, that for to oblige you thereunto, I will presently satisfie your demand.

About two moneths after you was departed from *Valence*, being revenged of the treachery of *Don Jouan*, I went to *Barcelone*, with intention to learn newes of *Hipolite*, and see if there was means to remedy her sicknesse; two dayes after my arrivall, I learned of our friend *Osave*, that her indisposition amended every day. These newes animated my hopes and affections. *Osave* being willing to shew me the testimonies of the passion which this Lady had for me, let me see the walls of the chamber where she was, all scored with our Characters, and my name which she had graven thereupon with her hand; from thence he carried me neer her bed, and as soon as she perceived me, one might see joy called again into her countenance, where melancholy had reigned before, and from thence, with a few visits her wits came againe into the best estate they had been ever seen in; so that as I had been the cause of their alienation, I was also the cause of her curing. After the decease of her father, the administration of his goods was given to one of her Uncles, called *Roderigue*, which is the Cavalier which you see &c by our friend *Leonard*; and then

then *Vincence*, seeing *Hipolite* in perfect health, began again the pursuit of his pretensions; you know of whom I speak, having given you knowledge enough thereof, when I told you of the beginning of my flames. He address'd himself to *Roderigue*, and demanded his Neece in marriage for the second time; she, who had then more liberty, then in the life time of her Father, understanding that he went about to have her whether she would or no, answered very resolutely, that no man should ever attain therunto but my self. This answer being reported to *Vincence*, wakened his indignation, and caused him to conspire against my life. Having advise thereof, I had a designe to prevent him, but my friends coming to the knowledg of it, knew so well how to perswade me, that following their counsels, I should absent my self for some time, saying, that it was not for her honour, and since that I was assured of *Hipolite*, they would order the time for our Marriage, whereby I should have much more glory over mine enemy, then if I had the contentment of my revenge, since that I must be forced to leave the Kingdome, and so lose the hope of enjoying my desires. I ask'd *Hipolites* opinion, who approved the counsell that was given me, and following her consentment, I retired my self into a Village neer *Valence*, from whence I went disguised to visit her, during the obscurity of the night. *Don Roderigue* durst not content the affections of his Neece, for fear of falling at odds, not only with *Vincence*, but also with all his kindred. Yet after a little time he determin'd to come into this town, where he hath a cosen marryed, and to bring *Hipolite* with him, to give us both the re-

compence due to our pains. The execution of this project was long time prolonged, since that there is two years and a half that I have languished in expectation thereof. I know not whether or no he did it expressly, to give leasure to time to make dye the passions of *Vincence*, or mine; but being upon the point of despair, I heard news which comforted me wonderfully. It is not much above fifteene daies, that I was told that his cosen had made a match betwixt him and a widow her friend, called *Perfinde*, a woman of most vertuous reputation, that is she which you see there in the midst of the other Ladies; and having knowne me so perseverant in the service of his Neece, he desired that his marriage and mine might be celebrated upon the same day. And to let you judg whether the object of my love bee worthy of so great constancy, look upon that Lady which you see to have the Posie of Diamonds upon her head, that is my Mistressse. See what hath brought me into this town, and made me desire the *Seigneur Leonard* to participate of my contentments, and assist me to celebrate them. I hope we shall be married this night, you being present, as for the rest I cannot expresse the joy that environes my heart, for that Heaven hath conducted you hither to honour me with your assistance. Now it is your part to interpret the z-nigma which you gave me to divine at our meeting. God be praised, answered *Fenise*, you have delivered me from a great disquietnesse. I was told in coming into this house, that you was about to marry the widow, a thing which I found little convenient, by reason of the inequality of your
age

age and hers. And very strange by a history I will tell you, at the recall whereof this Cavalier which pretends to marry her this night, will understand that he cannot doe it, she being no widow, as it is thought, since that I will make you presently see her lawfull husband living, as well as you or I, and by the same meanes you shall see your father and mother, of whom you never had yet knowledge. Oh God my dear *Fenise*, what doe you tell me! cryed out *Don Louis*, ah, what doe you make me languish in expecting your explication? Saying so, he spoke so loud, that the greatest part of the assembly turned to cast their eyes upon them, fearing that they had quarrelled. *Leonard* came to them againe, to know from whence proceeded this exclamation. Come, come, said *Fenise* to him, you have interest in the discourse which I have made to *Don Louis*, and having obliged them both to a curious attention, he continued to make the recitall of his fortunes, from the day that he embarked himself at *Livorne*, untill that of his arrivall at *Cartagene*. As he ended his discourse, he perceived *Frederick* which lead the Ladies, with the Gentlemen strangers, he faigned to have occasion to speak to one of his men which attended him at the door, and came to them, leaving *Don Louis* and *Leonard* looking one upon another without motion or words, with the excelsse of the astonishment which he had put them in. *Don Rodrigue* came to waken them from this extasie, and seeing their countenances a little altered, believed that this Gentleman stranger had told them something which troubled them: he asked them whither hee was

gone, and why they seemed to bee so melancholique; and then they briefly told him a part of that which *Fenise* had sayd, and so made him partake of their astonishment, and prepared him to see a strange change of the successe which he hoped for: Thereupon *Fenise* advanced, leading the three Graces with him, in the persons of *Magdelene*, *Leonor*, and *Eufemie*, followed by *Frederick*, *Don Iame*, *Geronime*, and *Charles*; all the company were mute, considering for what cause this troope of unknown people were come into this assembly. Some thought that they were some Mascarads; but *Fenise* in lifting up the Mantles of the Ladies, presented *Magdelene* and *Frederick* to *Perfide*, the one for Daughter, & the other for Husband, & *Eufemie* to *Leonard* in qualitic of sister. After that he took *Don Louis* by the hand, & put him in the middle amongst *Frederick*, *Perfide* and *Magdelene* giving him at this instant, a father, mother, and sister; this happy meeting, filled the whole company with this astonishment and gladnesse together: there was nothing but acclamations of gladnesse, embracements, transports, and ravishments of joy. It seemed that amongst all these felicities there was none but *Don Rodrigue* which ought not to be contented, but being in an age, wherein the greatest flames of love were dead, his prudence made him finde contentment in the pleasures of others, that of *Don Louis* was without measure, for besides the good fortune which heaven had favoured him withall, in letting him know those who had given him birth, he also enjoyed his loves in the possession of faire *Hipolite*. They were married that night, and the wedding

accomplished with astonishment and rejoycing incomparable; it was followed with a new joy, in the conquest of a soule, which they tooke from the empire of the Devill, to put it into the hands of God, by the meanes of holy baptisme which *Geronime* the Turk, heretofore called *Mahomet* solemnly received from the hands of the Bishop of *Cartagene*, having chosen for Godfather the venerable *Don Rodrique*, who was intreated to give him the name of *Geronime*, which he had taken before. The next day he married the infortunate *Eufemie*; she being the cause of the health of his soule, not being willing to consent to his desires, but in making him christian, and he of the reestablishment of her honour, which seemed to have been torne in pieces in the courtezans life vvhcreunto she had been abandoned, and engaged by the basenesse and infamy of her ravisher. This was a particular contentment for *Leonor* to see his sister so advantageously provided for after so many disgraces. Incontinently after was the wedding of *Don Iame*, and the vertuous and generous *Leonor*, who in acknowledgment of the obligations wick she had to *Fenise*, pardoned him the death of her brother.

More then fifteene dayes were employed in these joyous magnificences, where the most remarkeable persons of the province were, and the best wits exercised themselves to write upon the admirable encounters of these persons, and of their affections. But as there is no pleasure eternal in this world, this loving troope must be divided, some stayed at *Cartagene*, others went to *Valente* their country, and *Don Iame* tooke the way to *Leride*, whereof he was native. *Fenise* was onely he of this company, who

made a more troublesome experience, of the instabilitie of worldly felicitie. After the sports and playes whereof he had but a simple part, he must undergoe alone, the sadnesse and sorrow of the death of his father, deceased long agoe. *Don Louis* was much troubled to take a time to advertise him thereof, since that, besides the losse which he had made in his person, he was yet in danger to lose his estate, or at the least to see much of it diminished, because his kindred believing him to be dead, were possessed thereof, and had distributed it amongst them. *Don Louis* used much discretion to dispose his spirit to receive sweetely these bitter newes, but he had scarcely begun his premeditated discourse, when *Fenise* who was extreamely foreseeing, well knew to what end it tended and to avoid prolixitie of words, he prevented him with these; I see well said he, that you would suger the edge of the cup to make me swallow some bitter poison, but you know me too well to use me with this ceremony and hold me in suspence for to declare to me what imports me. Then *Don Louis* discovered nakedly unto him, all he knew, and although that *Fenise* had much experience and constancy, yet his eyes must testifie the feeling of his heart, the losse of a father is a griefe too sensible, he ought to have a breast of a rock, that will not be mollified therewith, or at the least to have desired his death. *Don Louis* comforted him in taking part of his sorrow, after that he had suffered, the first motions of sadnesse, his friend pressed him to remedy the disorders of his house. This sollicitation afflicted him almost as much as the newes of the death of his father, he could

could scarcely resolve to doe it, nor believe the counsells of *Don Louis*, because he must necessarily absent himselfe from himselfe in going from *Magdelene*. So that he deferred his departure from day to day, untill that his friend was constrained to tell him that he knew well from whence proceeded his delays; for *Frederick* his father had recounted to him the honest sute which he made to his sister, and how much they were all obliged to his wit and courage, he prayed him, not to lose time in recovering his estate, and to assure himselfe to obtaine all he could desire, not onely from him his sister, but also from their whole familie, who reputed it a great honour in the designe which he had to convert his amitie into kindred; that he knew well that *Magdelene* made great esteeme of his merits, besides the obligation which she had for her libertie, that she would alwaies prefer him before all the men in the world, and that he should never have cause to reproach him of the vice of ingratitude; these promises were confirmed to him, by the complements and civilities of *Frederick* and *Perfide*, and by the solemne oathes which *Magdelene* made him in particular, in conjuring him with teares in her eyes to return as soon as he could possible, & that he should finde her alwaies constant and alwaies loving; these actions were so charming that *Fenise* wanted not much of breaking his designe of going to *Toledo*, but the satisfaction which he was willing to give his friends, forced him to execute it. The day before his departure *Frederick* let him see a country house of pleasure which he had neere *Cartagene*, where treating him magnifically, he begun to quallifie him
with

with the name of Sonne in law, to the great contentment of the whole familie. He tooke leave of them in this place, with a thousand imbracements and towards the evening *Don Louis* returned with him into the towne, at the entry of the port they saw *Charles*, the slave that *Geronime* had brought with him, walking with a Cavalier very well covered, and followed by six Lacquies clothed in the same livery: the two future brothers in law approached them, and *Fenise* knew that it was *Don Antonio de Velazques* a cavalier of the court, who had beene his familiar friend, he also having faced him and knowne him, they ran one to the other, and locked themselves together for some time with streight embracings. *Charles* admiring this great testimony of affection, and seeing they were parted, Brother, said he to *Antonio*, if you have imbraced this illustrious Cavalier as your friend, I beseech you begin againe, as my benefactor, and him of whom I hold my libertie: it is the person I have but now prayesd unto you, and to whom I shall be alwayes obliged for my life. I could scarcely believe, said *Don Antonio* to *Fenise*, the marvells which he hath told me, but at the present, since that I see it was of you that he spoke, I am in lesse admiration, knowing that you can produce none but high actions. *Fenise* made many humble complements to answer these high prayses, and all their courteous ceremonies being finished, he prayed *Don Antonio* to tell him upon what occasion he had left *Madrid* to come to *Cartagene*, which he courteously did. He told him then that having learned that his brother *Charles* was a slave at *Algier*, he was come to
Cartagene

Cartagene to treat of his ransom, but that thanks be to God and his industry, (speaking to *Fenise*) he had found him when he expected him the least, and that having no other business he was ready to returne to *Madrid*. Thereupon they all entered into the towne, where *Don Louis* shewed how he honoured him, in offering him his fathers house, to the which he would have carryed him, but after a thousand thanks, he went to his Inn with *Charles* his brother, to whom *Fenise* made an infinite of of submissions, demanding his pardon for not having treated him with that respect which was due to him, praying him in fine to excuse his ignorance. Our Cavalier was advised by *Don Louis* not to lose the occasion of so good company, and to goe with them, since that they all went the same way, this resolution pleased very well *Don Antonio*, which they put in execution the next day; they entertained themselves upon the way with many discourses to divert the trouble and tediousnesse of the voyage, and in talking together they fell upon this discourse of marriage, saying that it was necessary for every one, to take a party conformable to his disposition, equal to his quality, & agreeable to his inclinations, which gave subject to *Fenise*, to demand of *Don Antonio*, what successe his amorous passion had, which he had when he absented himselfe so long time from *Madrid*; since that you know the birth thereof, answered *Antonio*, I cannot excuse my selfe from relating unto you, the divers accidents thereof, whereby you shall see the most rare and strange history, that hath beene ever heard of. If peradventure I tell you some circumstances which
you

you already know, it shall bee for want of memory, or that I shall judge it necessary to the weaving of my discourse, that if I have named this history strange and rare, I assure my self that you taking the pain to hearken to it with attention, will your self repute it, alone, and prodigious.

THE HISTORY OF DON ANTONIO.

*M*adrid our Country, a towne recommendable for a thousand divers considerations; wholesome by the good temperature of the aire; pleasant for the fair situation, and illustrious for its admirable structures and ædifices, was almost at the same time the cradle and tombe of a Cavalier, rich in the gifts of nature, and enough gratified with the goods of Fortune, his name was Don Fernand de Figueroa. Of twenty three years which he lived, he passed two in marriage with a Lady of less age than himself, but equall in quality. He left his dear wife a widow as full of hopes, being ready to lie down, as charged with troubles for his losse, which was so sensible to her, and her sorrow so violent, that she was delivered some daies before her terme. *Eugenie*, so was this Lady called, brought into the world an enemy of liberty, in a daughter perfectly faire, and a lively portrait of her dead husband, in a sonne accomplished with all that he could bring from his birth. They were presently carried to nurses, which were chosen in the villages near Madrid, and who took upon them to give them

them necessary nourishment : poverty or profit excite often times persons to sell their proper blood. These twins arrived at Faith by the port of sacred Baptisme ; the sonne was called after his Father, to the end he might inherit his name, as well as other things, and the sister had to name *Cbaritie*, it may be by mystery, or to expresse the graces wherewith she was so liberally stored. The Nurses pleased themselves in taking care of them, and to exercise themselves with emulation, as well to keep them neatly, as to nourish them ; in a word, they cherished them more than their proper children. A family cannot be sayd unhappy, if it suffer not many disasters ; for it seemeth that the first misfortune is the harbinger that comes to prepare a lodging for another, as may be well seen by this successe, since that the infortunate youth of *Fernand*, and his losse served as an Adamant to draw misfortune into his house. About two moneths after the birth of these little ones, one of the Nurses had newes that her husband was in great extremity of sicknesse, and that they feared every houre that he should dye. Conjugall amitie solicited her on one side to goe have a care of her husband, on the other side her duty and fear to lose the recompence she hoped to have for her good service, hindred her from quitting her place ; and leaving this house liberal and abundant in riches. Tossed with these two contrary considerations, her rustique judgement tooke a mean, or to say better, an unhappy end for her self. One afternoone towards the evening, she asked leave to go see one of her kindred, and as it is not usuall to refuse to such kinde of persons what they demanded;

ded ; for fear of angring them, and altering the purity of their milk, she easily obtained leave, shee went out, carrying in her armes the little childe, having before taken order to finde at the gate of the towne the commoditie of a cart that returned from the Market held that day at *Madrid*, from whence there was but two miles unto her village. She found her husband lesse sick in his bed then in his imagination ; and to the end that it might not be perceived that she went so farre, she resolved to returne presently, and immediately executed it, not as she came, but on foot, and alone, the better to hide her fault, carrying the childe asleep in her armes ; her judgement mistooke the time of the day, the night surprised her in the way, and coming to the corner of a hedge, two men came to her, to take from her the packet which she carryed ; for the obscurity hindered them from distinguishing what it was : she begunne to cry and call for help, and because there were houses near thereunto, these two men fearing to be taken, gave her two stabs into the throat with a poyniard, and tooke from her that which she held in her armes, leaving this unfortunate woman upon the ground, miserably dying. This little infant was no sooner in their hands but he awaked, and begun to cry. They much astonished to see their hopes of a booty frustrate, were not yet so barbarous as to hurt him, his tendernesse served him as a Sanctuary, and his innocence for protection. They fled from this place, for fear of being taken for Murderers, carrying this infant unto another village out of the way, giving it to a poore woman, making her believe, to oblige
her

her to receive it, that it appertained to a Lady of great condition, whose deliverance was kept secret, and the necessity of the secret had constrained them to bring it to her in this estate, as for the rest, that she should have care thereof, and that she should have given her whatsoever she should demand.

What is it which profit doth not in imagination? this woman received it tenderly, hoping for the promised hire, made her affection increase, which was the more warmed by the losse of another little child, which was dead a little before, so that happily she had wherewith to continue his first nurture. The ignorance of his true name, and her desire to deceive her memory, made her give him the name of her sonne, and attempting to put him in his place, she called him *Antonie*. At the beginning she was impatient to know his parents, but afterward she desired that no body would avow him, for feare he should be taken out of her arms. In the interim his true mother ceased not to weep, having known the accident happened to her nurse, she easily perswaded her self, that he had served for a fair trophy to the triumph of death, and that some beast had devoured him; it is common to the fearfull to believe all which their imaginations propose horrible.

Nature, which discovers the birth by the inclinations, giving desires to every one according to the quality of his blood, had not lesse fore-sight for *Don Fernand*, then for other humanes, we will call this child so in the continuance of this discourse, since that it is his true name. Although he was rustical-
ly

ly brought up, he did not forbear to doe actions which gave notice of the place from whence he was issued. From his infancy, his ordinary sports was to assemble the little boyes of the Village, arm them with staves in fashion of swords and pikes, then putting himselfe in the head of them, made them march against some place defended by others, which they set upon, and so naturally begun to give himself to military exercise. Having attained to twelve years of age, he left the Village, and went to the Court. The King had at that time created foure Regiments to send into *Flawders*, whereof one of my Uncles, my Fathers Brother, had the first. This little boy presented himself to him, demanding to serve him; my Uncle considered his little resolute countenance, his proportion and boldnesse; found him so pretty, that he brought him to my Fathers house, to the which he was much affected; from the beginning he made him be clothed otherwise then he had yet beene, and after this change of clothes, he immediately changed his manners and fashion of life, so that within a little time, he became so different from what he was when he came to our house, that he knew not himself, making all to admire the truth of this proverbe, *Honours change manners*. All the whole house much esteemed him; he had sweetnesse in his face, and mildnesse in his actions, which rendred him pleasant to the eyes of all; we two loved one another passionately, the equality of yeares is a strong mediatrix of love; we were of the same age and height; we went alwayes together to our exercises, whether of body or mind; we learned the latine tongue at the
same

same time, (a science very proper for Gentlemen, and Princes; which formes the memory, perfects discourse, and teacheth them eloquence, which charmes the hearts of the most barbarous.) And his spirit was so disposed to learning, that there was none could win the prize from him in the whole Academy; he left all behind him, which made him to be beloved of the Master, and envied of the scholars; he had done there wonders, if his inclination had not carryed him to another kinde of life. At that time my Uncle was ready to depart with his Regiment into *Flanders*, and *Fernand* having news thereof, imployed all his little industry to oblige him to take him with him, so that mine Uncle, to content his generous desire, condescended thereunto. Two years after the departure of mine Uncle, my Father had a burning Feaver, which carried him to his grave, to render the tribute which all mortals owe to nature. All our Line was much grieved thereat, but it lasted not long, principally for my part, I seeing my self installed in my birth-right, and in the possession of a great estate, if I shed tears at my Fathers death, they were rather of joy then sadnesse, or for that he had no sooner left me his succession: humane malice lets us now see many children of so ill dispositions; and it is not long agoe since I heard a young Lord say, being in an assembly six steps from his Father, that when children had once passed twenty years, their Fathers did but trouble them. After the yeare of exterior mourning, I begun to appear rather by my cloathes, then my vertues; I was clothed with habits, and feathers in my hat, of all the rare colours which

S

could

could be found, a vanity wherewith youth is ordinarily carryed away.

Charitie, the Sister of *Don Fernand*, was then of mine age, and faire as they paint an Angell; her discourfes were fo much above the ableft of her fex, that adding the divine qualities of her wit, with the lufre and attractions of her countenance, one knew not what judgment to make thereof, fince that any of them did figure her more then mortall. Thofe that would have doubted of her noblenefs and virtue, might draw witneffes thereof from the majefty of her carriage, and the reclufe life which fhe lead. She was knowne to none but the fervants of the houfe, and went abroad but very rarely, and in a Coach, and yet was fhe wrapped in a mantle, fo well, that but a fhadow of her perfon could be feen. Her houfe was not far from mine, and one day of great devotion, for the refpect of the feaft, I found place to fee her come out of her houfe on foot, accompanying her mother: They went together, followed by two Gentlewomen, to vifit the Churches, and do the actions of chriftian mortification, for it was the day wherein was represented the tragedy of our redemption, and wherein the author of life died for the fafety of all men. I followed them difcreetly rather to fatisfie my curiofity, then devotion. She went foftly, leaning upon the arme of one of her fervants, and in the meane while I confidered the beauty of her proportion. *Charitie* incontinently perceived my actions and intentions, which obliged her to confider by stealth my perfon and fafhion: For although a woman will not love, yet fhe taketh pleasure to fee her felfe beloved. I
know

know not whether or noe she found something in me that pleased her; but either by artifice or otherwise, she permitted by her mantle a beame of her eyes to shine upon my face which lasted no longer then a lightning, I never saw a more ravishing beauty, and from that instant I remained so charmed that for a long time I was insensible. At the end of this extasie I continued to follow after the shadow of this Sun, and conducted her with mine eye unto the doore of her house, from thence I returned home my spirit troubled with a thousand confusions, one while forming a designe to declare unto her the acquisition which she had made of my liberty, and another while imagining that this conquest, was no great glory to her, my humility rendered me fearefull. In these irresolutions I could not hinder my selfe from making rounds and walkes about her house, endeavouring to see her sometimes at the windowes, this issued very happily, yet after having passed much time therein, almost a whole moneth was employed before I could enjoy a little light of this star. In the end, not for to trouble you with the recitall of the paines I tooke to get acquainted with her, I will tell you that I persevered so constantly in this passion, and rendered her such certaine testimonies thereof, that after having scene my flames painted by my writing, she had pittie thereof, or to say better she felt the heat thereof. There are not many women, how cruell so ever they be, that having hearkened to the plaints of a lover, doe not compassionate his grieve, and assay to give him ease. A love which drawes nourishment from two breasts of an infant presently

becometh a giant. At the end of two yeares ours arrived at so so perfect a grandure, and *Charitie* knew me so loyall, that she promised me the last favour upon my word, I ingaged to her my faith in calling to witnesse the celestially powers to marry her when she pleased, and with this assurance she consented to accomplishment of my desires the night following; moments seemed ages in expecting the houre she had given me, the day seemed to be eternall, or that a new *Joshua* had stayed the Sun, but in the end light gave place to darkenesse; and then, as a generous courage called to fight, endeavours to be the first at the place appointed, so I being called to this amorous duell; desiring to testifie my valour, I came before the houre given, and rendred my selfe in a certaine place under the windowes of *Charitie*, as she had appointed me. She who kept *Senninell* seeing me come so soone called me softly, and prayed me to retire untill her mother was in bed, for feare that in expecting too long time, I might be perceived by some curious person who might trouble our designe. I found her counsell very judicious, and executed it upon the instant, exercising the vertue of patience without any merit.

Fernand had beene in *Flanders* with mine uncle eight yeares, and some monthes, where he had in the hazards of warre rendred a thousand good testimonies, of his birth and valour, to the great advantage of this Monarchie, when mine uncle his master of the camp sent him to *Madrid*, with many letters addressed to his friends, and great persons of the court, in commendation of the merits of *Fernand* who

who besides these favourable letters brought scars upon his body, which served for faithfull attestations of his generositie; he arrived that very night, and went to lodg with some young gentlemen, who were come from *Flanders* a little before him, and who were at the court, pretending as he himselſe did recompences of their services, they received him very courteously, and feasted him, but after supper which was thus very late, it was impossible for him to goe to bed without seeing me. Desiring then to satisfy this impatient desire, he quitted his company to come seeke me; for besides his particular affection, that solicited him thereunto, he had letters for me from mine uncle.

The assignation which I had made with *Cbaritie* was the cause that he found me not at home, which obliged him to returne to his lodging, which to doe, he must necessarily passe before *Cbarities* house, as he did, and just at the favourable moment I was expected, and that all the domestiques were asleepe. The proportion of *Fernand*, the obscurity of the night, the motion of the lover, the apprehension of shame, the feare of scandall, accompanied with strong imaginations which represent oftentimes to our intellects, the objects we desire, troubled so much poore *Cbaritie*, that seeing *Don Fernand* approach, she believed it was I, and then without other ceremony, or longer attending she threw him downe a key wrapt in her handkercheif, and bade him open the dore and enter presently; *Don Fernand* was so surpris'd, that he knew not whether it was a dream, or an illusion; but having taken up the handkercheif and found the key to open the dore,

as he was bidden, he knew that it was a reality, and judged that he was taken for another. He stayed a little consulting with himself, if he should prove this adventure to enter into this unknown house, or to keepe on his way, but thinking in cowardly-nesse to doubt if he should enter, he resolved to adhere to the summons, and hazard the successe thereof. He approached and opened the doore, then put it too simply without locking of it that he might goe out againe the more easily if there was occasion, he crossed a great court, and entered into a hall, which *Charite* had opened, to let me come up to her chamber which was the first story high, finding himselfe there in the darke and meeting no body, he knew not what to doe or say: if he went on he knew not whither he went, and if he should speake he feared to be heard; in brieft he was in so great confusion, that he knew not what to doe: immediately after these irresolutions had ceazed upon his spirit, I whom love called to the recompence of my paines came to the street doore, I thrust it softly, and seeing that it yeelded to me, and opened so easily, I believed that it was the providence of *Charitie* which had left it open, to the end that I might enter without noyse.

Antonio broke off this discourse at this place, because they arrived at their lodging for that night, referring the rest untill the next morning, that this history might serve them for divertisement, against the tediousnesse of the way; these three friends arrived that night in the towne of *Mourcia*, where were they were scarcely entered into their chambers, when they heard a rumour in the court of the

Inne

inne which their window regarded. *Fenise* looked to see what it was, and saw three men with their swords in their hands, who had invironed another, who defended himselfe generously. *Fenise* tooke his sword and ran incontinently to assist him, or to take up the quarrell; but at soone as the others saw their adversary assisted they retired themselves, seeming to be contented, to proceede no further. Our Cavalier having disingaged this stranger from the danger he was in, carryed him into his chamber where *Antonio* was, where he was knowne for his cousin and *Fenise* his friend; this was the Cavalier of *Valence*, called *Marcel* of whom we have heretofore spoken in the first and second bookes. They were all, extremely glad to meete so happily, and that they went all the same way, for *Marcel* went also to *Toledo*. They asked him from whence proceeded this quarrell, and who were these three men: he answered that they were Merchants, and that he was angred with an uncivil word, that they had spoken to him in alighting; and that he would have his horse put in the stable in the place where one of theirs stood; saying so the three Merchants came to demand his pardon for their insolence, excusing themselves in not knowing his qualitie, and so the peace was made, and every one passed the night in repose: the next day they continued their voyage. Being out of the towne. *Fenise* prayed *Marcell* to tell him for what cause he went to *Toledo*: who desiring to satise his curiosity, said thus. Your absence is the cause that you are ignorant that I am married in that towne to a cousin of *Seigneur Don Antonio*. This alliance was treated of betwixt his

kindred and mine at my returne from *Italy*, whether I went incontinently after you, and I tooke leave one of the other; I esteeme my selfe so happy in this condition, that one may say that God had reserved us, to unite us together, our affections and wills are so conformable. It may be you desire to know wherfore I have made this voyage to *Cartagene* from whence I come as well as you: the subject thereof is prodigious, I will tell it you by the way, and assure my selfe that you heard the like never spoken of, for it is rare. We will put you in minde of it said *Charles*, when my brother hath finished the history which he hath begun, then *Antonio* seeing that they all concurred in the same desire, begun againe his discourse in this manner. Since that *Seigneur Marcel* hath so often heard it recounted, it is not necessary to say againe what I have already told you, I will begin againe onely where I left.

As I entered then into this hall, *Don Fernand* heard me, better than he saw me, he retired aside, for feare of being met, and put himself in a corner near the door of the stairs which went to the chamber of *Charitie*. I who thought to goe in security, and who knew well the lodging, went right to the staires, *Fernand* who perceived me to approach, drew a Ponyard which he wore at his girdle, thinking I was some of the household servants, or some neighbour that had seen him enter, who counterfeiting the ignorant would surprise him, and chastise him for his rashnesse, so that as I came to passe by him, he fell upon me, and gave me two stabs with the poyniard, the one upon the other, which (if I had
not

not had on a Buffe-coat which hindered the iron from entring farre) had killed me upon the instant, I fell neverthelesse at his feet, all bloody, and in a swoond, and at the same instant he got the doore and fled. In the interim *Charitie* attended, and seeing so much delay, she believed that I could not finde the staires of her chamber. In this opinion, she took a little Wax candle, and came down softly where I was ; at the first she saw me along upon the ground, but not knowing what this should signifie, she came nearer , and found the dear object of her passions almost in the like condition, as heretofore *Venus* her lover hurt by a wild Boare. I cannot represent unto you what grieve surpris'd at that time poor *Charitie*, it is easier for you to imagine it, than me to expresse it. She presently judg'd, that her mother having discovered our secret intelligences, had begunne her vengeance upon me, which she would finish upon her. This false opinion made so strong an impression upon her spirits, and feare possessed her so powerfully, that she thought she saw nothing about her but the images of death. In fine she suffered her selfe to be so extremely troubled with these panique feares, that it was impossible for her to take any good resolution. Without regarding her condition, without respect of her honour, or consideration of the danger whereunto she exposed her selfe, she at that instant left the house, accompanied onely with misfortunes, and adorned with the jewels which she ordinarily wore, which were, a cross of Diamonds, which she wore upon her breast, two Pearles like Peares, which hung in her eares, and a Garland of gold

gold, Emeralds and Rubies, which she had about her haire. Thus desolate she crossed the whole Town of *Madrid*, and went to the last houses which are towards the Meadows of *St. Ieronime*, where the walkes and projects of Lovers and Courtezans are made. Having put up her stones into her pocket, she entered without choice or consideration into the house of a poor woman, not being able to go further, because the day, which begun to break, might have discovered her.

All this while I remained in the estate and place where *Cbaritie* had found me, untill the rising of a servant, who coming to make clean the hall, as she did every day, perceived at the entry thereof a body which she believed to be dead; affrighted with this spectacle, she went to the chamber of her Mistresse, the mother of *Cbaritie*, telling her more with astonishment then words what she had seen. This Lady allarmed with this accident, rose, and made all her servants to be called, who ranne all to me at the same time; they tooke me from the ground, and layed me upon a bed, and in the doubt wherein they were, whether I was dead or alive, sent presently for a Chirurgeon, in expecting him, none of them knowing what to doe to me, they heated linnen cloathes to warme me, and cast water in my face, to waken my spirits if I were swoounded: In fine, amongst all these accurable diligences, they were put out of the paine wherein they were, seeing me make a great sigh, which testified unto them that I was yet living. Thereupon the Chirurgeon arrived, he looked upon my wounds, and putting the first plaister thereupon, stayed the little blood
that

that rested in my veines. When my strength was a little come unto me, I prayed *Eugenie*, that I might be carryed into my lodging, conjuring her not to afflict her selfe, nor to be troubled for my disgrace; for although I was ignorant of whom I had received it, I did not forbear to assure her that all her domestiques were innocent. She enquired of me how this misfortune had arrived me in her house; but not knowing what to answer her, I faigned that my paine hindered me from speaking, as in truth it was very sensible; the Chirurgeon accommodated himselfe to my necessity, told her that I ought not to speak; by this means I avoyded my troublesome examination, and was carryed home. This good Lady extreamly troubled with this scandall, went up to *Charities* chamber, doubting that she knew something of this misfortune, but the first displeasure was followed with an affliction much more cruell; she saw the doore open, and the chamber voyd of that she thought to finde therein. They called *Charitie*, they sought her thorough all the house, but they knew not what was become of her; and when they had told *Eugenie* that those who went to fetch the Chirurgeon had found the street door open, this poor Lady fell into a fearfull despair, she tore her haire, and rent her garments, and made clamours which touched with grief the most insensible. She studied to find out conjectures of these prodigious events, but amongst all her thoughts, she could finde nothing but feares and confusions. Oh unhappy destinie, cried she, with force of torment, art not thou content with the misfortunes which thou hast made me already suffer

fer, must yet my heart be tormented with so bitter a wound, is it necessary, that after the losse of the splendour of our house, and the sweetnesse of my life, in the person of my husband, which was ravished from me almost as soon as heaven had given him to me, and after the losse of a sonne, which remained for my comfort and stay, that I must be defamed in honour and reputation by the Rape of a daughter, whose presence and company were so dear to me? But what, for the last losse I can reprove no body but my self! I am the cause of this infamous disaster, having too much adhered to her will, and using too much mildnesse in reproving her foolish desires, now I am exposed to the opprobry of all women of my condition, abandoned to the last attempts of misfortune, and overwhelmed with extreame misery. Suffer then my soule since thou hast wanted prudence in the conduct of *Charitie*; and you mine eyes blinde your selves with weeping, since that you have not seen the precipices which environ beauty; and since that you have not watched to guard a treasure, coveted by so many ingenious spirits, and so ardent in such conquests. See with what she entertained her mouth, whilst by her eyes her heart distilled into tears.

The Justice advertised of my disgrace happened in the house of this widow, stayed not long to run thither, knowing that there was wherewith to pay them for their paines. Amongst the rumours which these Officers (and the people they brought with them) made, *Don Fernand* found invention to mingle himselfe with them, desiring to know who he was which he had hurt, and the occasion of this
successe

successse ; but because they had carried me to my lodging, he could not content his curiositie. He saw his unknown mother all in tears, and dejected with the oppression of so many different crosses, his heart was so lively touched with compassion, that if he could have believed that it would have eased her, he would freely have confessed his crime; he felt something in his soule which provoked him to take pittie of this poor Lady, the force of the blood wherof their hearts were formed, gave him the feeling. They put into prison all the servants of the house, the which was given for a prison to *Eugenie*, with some women of her chamber to serve her untill the authour of this scandall should be discovered. The Judge promised the widow to favour her all that he could, to discharge her, although the absence of her daughter testified enough her innocence. These things being done, *Don Fernando* came to my lodging to give me mine Uncles Letters, where he understood, in confirmation of what he had heard at *Eugenes*, that I was the hurt man, and so feeble by the losse of blood, that there was no great hopes of my life : his heart bled when he knew himselfe to bee the authour of my misfortune. He went home, not being permitted to speak to me, he a thousand times cursed the day of his arrivall, and the rashnesse which he had to enterprise an action so extravagant. Besides his extreame sorrow to see me reduced to this estate by his little consideration, he might well be afflicted, for the delay of his affaires at the Court, because the good successse thereof depended partly upon the credit which I had with those who could favour

vour his pretensions. They would not speake to me of his returne, untill they saw my hurts begin a little to amend, then he came to see me, and presenting me with the letters from mine Uncle, the feeling of the affection which I bore him, exceeded that of my hurt, although it was great, made me almost goe out of my bed to embrace him; we remained some time with our armes about one anothers necks, which when we quitted, I observed that he had great trouble to retaine the teares which griefe brought into his eyes. I read my letters, which in few words containd many recommendations of the merits of *Fernand*, and I thereupon told him, that my duty and his vertue so straightly obliged me to serve him, that these letters were superfluous; after these civill complements, the desire which *Fernand* had to understand by what encounter I came into the house where this strange accident had happened us, obliged him to put me upon the discourse of the estate I found my selfe in: and I who had the like desire to entertaine him with this subject, as being my ancient friend, I made him the recital of all my adventure, from the beginning untill the very point where he saw me (amongst friends there need no great praiers, for to recount the successes caused by ladies) and when I came to speake of his encounter, and of the time that he hurt me, I believe that I revenged my selfe too cruelly, of his ignorance, for in stead of two blowes with a poiniard which he gave me, I gave him more then a hundred, as many words as I spoke, were so many daggers point wherewith I pierced his heart, so sensible was the griefe he had thereof. I have used, said I to him

him, all possible diligence to discover who hath so treated me, but neither in thought nor otherwise, can I finde any subject capable of this accusation; so that I am constrained to imagine, that it is from my selfe that I have received this rigorous chastisement, or that it is come to me from some soveraigne power; I have some reason to believe, and call it so, and your self will have the same opinion; see upon what I ground it.

When I tooke accessse to *Charitie*, I affected but her beauty, and pretended but only to delights; for at the same time I courted another Lady, and sought her in marriage, because of her great riches; in the one I loved pleasure, and in the other profit, in this the fashion, in that the waight, so that my covetousnesse exceeding my love, counselled me that it was better, to have gold in money then in threads of haire, and to possesse pearles that resembled teeth, then teeth that were like pearles. I propounded also to my self, that in enjoying *Charitie*, and marrying *Cleonte*, so was this other Lady called; all my desires would be contented, and in this project I endeavoured to amuse and abuse with my promises this poore Lover which confided therein. So that under these perfidious assurances, I went cruelly to ravish her honour, with intention to glory in her shame, when heaven, the faithfull protector of innocents, and revenger of treason, made mee meet with a hand that punished the will as the effect of the crime: If I dyed not upon the place, I believe that it was but to give me leasure to repent my fault. A scruple sometimes ariseth in my spirit upon the absence of *Charitie*, which that night
left

left her house, almost presuming that shee should not be innocent of the action; and yet when I represent unto my selfe the testimonies of her love, her constancy, faith, the graces of her face, and the sweetnesse of her spirit, I condemne my selfe, and demand of my selfe reparation for the injury which I doe her, so that after having endeavoured to finde some clearing to my doubts, I alwaies finde my spirit the more oppressed with trouble and confusion.

This was the discourse I made to *Don Fernand*, by the which I discovered nakedly unto him my thoughts and secrets. He endeavoured to comfort me, in telling me, that time would one day give me ample satisfaction for my displeasures; that he took part in my evill, as if it was his own, and that he would alwaies contribute for my service, all that did depend upon his honour, fortune, and life. I gave him a thousand honest thankses for his courtesie, and so we parted for that day: two moneths after I was entirely healed; my first going abroad was employed to sollicite his affaires, where my credit conjoynd to his merit, made him obtaine a Regiment of foure companies, wherewith he was much satisfied, and of new obliged to love me. During all this long space of time, *Charitie* remained shut up in the house of this poor woman, as I told you, as much accompanied with confusion and fear, as separated from consolation and assurance. Time which destroyeth and healeth all things, had no vertue for her, he rather furcharged her with affliction, than gave her ease. She sometimes sent her Hostesse to *Madrid*, and into her
street

street, to attempt to learne what brute runne of her affairs; but whether it was that this woman had not industry enough to inform her self thereof, or that those to whom she spoke were ignorant thereof, she never brought good news to *Charitie*. Seeing then that she was there destitute of all means to get out of the troubles and languishings wherein she lived, or rather wherein she dyed, she resolved to goe to *Seville*, where lived one of her Uncles, which possessed the goods of her house, which had falne to her, had she been of another sex; for they descended upon the Males; her brother enjoyed no more thereof then her selfe; for it was thought he was dead. *Charitie* hoped that this Uncle would have pittie of her misfortune, and that he would lovingly receive her. Shee communicated this to *Fregonde*, so was her hostesse called, who adhered to all her propositions. She perswaded her to accompany her in this great voyage, that she might give less suspicion to those that should see so much youth and beauty go all alone through the country; and to oblige her the more, shee shewed her her jewels, which she had not yet seen, saying that shee had wherewith to pay her for her paines, and to warrant her from want. *Fregonde* was not so stupid but the brightness of these stones wakened her understanding and covetousnesse: upon the instant she propounded to make her selfe rich, by making these Jewels hers by some pernicious stratagem, and whilst that *Charitie* prepared her selfe for this voyage, the other disposed her selfe to robbe her. Oh too naked innocence! Oh poor girle too ignorant of worldly malice! who would have sayd the unfortunate *Charitie*, that in going in the company
T of

of *Fregonde*; she cast her selfe into the clawes of a wolfe and a Tygresse.

This cursed woman had a husband of her manners, who was unknowne to *Charitie*, not having entred into his house since her coming hither: he had no other exercise, with foure companions which he had, but to watch passengers, into favourable places, to take from them and lighten them of what they carried. *Fregonde* advertised him by a letter, of the voyage which she was about to make, with a woman, without naming her, it being unnecessary, who carryed Jewells of great value, with some pearles of such, and such fashions, that he should separate himselfe from his company, for some time, that the enterprize might be the more secretly executed, and that they might remaine the sole masters of the booty; besides, that they two going alone without defence, there was no neede of other helpe; the letter being well sealed she directed it to a taverne; where this thiefe and his complices frequented, every day, having intelligence with the master thereof: then she put it into the hands of a Merchants man, which did nothing but goe and come upon the way where her husband was; having businesse for his master, and necessarily passing by this taverne, because it was upon the high way. *Fregonde* thought that her letter should be faithfully delivered, because she halfe knew this servant, having often seen him frequent the house next to hers; and also having expressly recommended it to him: but this messenger who knew the evil reputation of *Leon*, the name of the husband of *Fregonde*, and of the taverne wherunto this letter was directed,

directed, by divine inspiration, as I believe curious to see the contents of this letter, which he had received, not being too well assured that there was nothing therein to his disadvantage, whatsoever it was he opened it, and saw the complot which this wicked woman made with her husband. This man would willingly have returned to *Madrid*, to have accused her to the justices, but a dispatch which he carried for his master could not permit him to returne. Yet he determined to prevent, and hinder this conspiracy, in declaring it to the Justice of the towne next to the tavern. In this resolution he went on and continued his voyage, but by misfortune he lost the letter by the way, before he arrived at *Illescas*.

One of the people of *Eugenies* coming from that towne upon some businesse of mistresses, seeing this letter, lighted, tooke it up, and read what you have heard, & put it in his pocket; astonished at the wickednesse, that is committed in this world. Being arrived at *Madrid*, and having rendered account to his mistresse of his voyage, he shewed her this letter, not knowing that she had interest therein, and told her how he had found it in the high way, admiring divine providence, for having it may be, hindered the execution of this theft, by the losse of this letter, this lady read it two or three times, that seeming still clearer which she suspected, for although there was no name, the quality of the jewels which she specified, made her presume that they were those of *Charlotte*, she begun againe to renew her eyes and groanes, she believed her daughter dead, and her honour violated, imagining that they could not

take away her life, without stripping her of her integrity; after the most violent apprehensions of these new sorrowes, were a little moderated, she forced her selfe to resist against the excesse of her affliction, to the end to attempt it by the the meanes of this letter, she could get notice of the rape of *Charitie*, for she believed that she was stolne away. She went to the President and soveraigne magistrate of *Castile*, let him heare her complaints, and recitall of her disaster, producing this letter, which might give some light in these confusions. There was a Commissary presently deputed to goe search the places about this tavern, and to seise upon the host: but although this ordinance was promptly made, it could not be so diligently executed, but two or three daies after the messenger arrived at the place where he had designe to reveale his secret to the Justice, but as he thought to have done it, he found not his letter, which might render testimony of his declaration. then judging that he should not be believed alone he went on. In following his way he was taken by the same thieves, amongst whom was the husband of *Fregonde*; seeing himselfe thus in danger to lose his life, and money, he remembered himselfe of the name of the person to whom the letter was directed. He demanded if *Leon* was not in their company, and they told him that he was their chiefe; at the instant he tooke him aside and told him in this torment of feare, all that was contayned in the letter, the apprehension of death wherein he was made him tell all. *Leon* cunningly informed himselfe of all the circumstances, that seemed important whereby he knew the riches of the proposed these

cheft, and the terrour which oppreffed this unhappy man. He gave him his liberty for his advife, obliging him by oathe to difcover nothing of what he had told him to any one. See this unhappy messenger efaped from the hands of thefe thieves whileft on the other fide *Leon* disbanded himfelfe upon the instant, and went all alone to attend the prey which he hoped for. Whileft this was done *Cbaritie* was upon her way, mounted npon a Mule, and followed by her treacherous companion on foote, going little journeyes, and advancing towards the rendez-vous of thefe unhappy people, where ſhe was to loſe in a moment all the gratifications which fortune had given her in many yeares; her perfidious guide, meafured ſo well, I would ſay ſo maliciously, her time, that ſhe arrived towards night at *Sierca Morena*; poore *Cbaritie* travelled in feare, the heart, the faithfull nuntio of good or evill, advertiſed her of the danger ſhe was going to fall into, the effect thereof was not much delayed, in paſſing by a cloſe way. *Leon* came out of a certaine place, full of buſhes and thornes: and as a ravenous wolfe ſurpriſeth an innocent ſheepe, this *Lion* ceazed with his clawes upon fearefull *Cbaritie*, who fell in a ſwound for feare upon the instant, the perfidious *Fregonde* begun to cry out and faining to run away, ſhe drew aſide into the buſhes, and then this barbarian inſenſible of the grieve of this young gentlewoman, without reſpect of her beauty, ſearched her all over: but he had ſcarcely begun this insolent action, when he heard a horſeman to approach him, who being in this ſuſpicious place favourable to theeves, gallopped with his piſtoll in his hand

hand and the cock up, this theefe could not so soon retire himsele out of the way, but this Cavalier was with him, they were both of them in distrust, the one believing they came to take him, and the other that they would rob him, because that *Leon* was equipaged in such manner, that he might be well taken for a thiefe. He seeing the posture of the Cavalier, presented him with the mouth of his carabin which which he wore in a belt, but by good fortune it tooke not fire; the Cavalier lost no time, but discharged his pistoll against his body charged with two bullets, before he could draw his sword, as he was going to doe, *Leon* fell to the ground, not dead but dangerously wounded. *Don Fernand* lighted (this was the revenger of the crimes of this theefe) and ceazed upon his armes to serve himsele therewith, in case of neede. He seeing himsele so happily dispatched, by the assistance of my credit, went towards *Seville* as well for the desire he had to see so faire a towne, as to make a young gentleman which dwelt there, it being the place of his birth, the first captaine of his little regiment, being acquainted with him in *Flanders*, to make him participate of his good fortune.

Just heaven, which maketh us sometime to feele its rigours, to give us afterwards abundance of favours, permitted that *Charitie* came from her mortall trance, wherein she was false. In opening her eyes she saw the trayteresse *Fregonde*, with a visage of a fury of hell groaping yet in her breast where she had put her jewells, and then with feeble voice: What *Fregonde* said she, are these the effects of a person, who hath sworne to me an amitie inviolable? ah cruell ? is it possible that thou art confederate

federate with the theeves which have robbed me? Don Fernand who seemed to be destinated for the protection of *Charitie*, hearing this plaintive voice, ran presently to the place where she was, he saw this maide along upon the ground, and this cursed woman, stripping her of her jewells and clothes. *Fergonde* had heard the pistoll discharged, but she thought it had beene her husband that had shot for some designe; for she had not seene the Cavalier: so that when he came neere her, she believed that it was *Leon* who returned, so much she was troubled, and attentive to her wicked action. The cavalier seeing this young beauty thus rudely treated, moved with compassion, and blinded with choler, or it may be, put forwards by heaven, which serveth it selfe very often of one man to punish another, gave her three blowes with his sword, which made three issues for her soule to goe the sooner out of her treacherous body. *Charitie*, who saw this action, imagined that she had done *Fregonde* wrong to suspect her of infidelitie, and believed that this Cavalier was the same theefe that had stayed them: so that she expected the same misfortune that had befallne her companion, but as death flyeth ordinarily from those that expect it, it happened so to her. Finish bloodsucker, said she to *Fernand*, finish to glut thy cruelty, and take from me this languishing life. He knowing that she tooke him for the theefe, answered her, Madame you see the defendor of your person and life, and a gentleman that will expose his, for your service if you please. *Charitie* hearing these words found her selfe more confounded then before, she knew not what to thinke thereof, but considering that so courte-

ous words could not proceede out of the mouth of a thiefe, she called againe her spirits, and stretched out her armes to the Cavalier, who raised her from the earth. He conjured her to assure her self upon his person, and to believe that she was in the hands of a man of honour, where there should be rendered her no displeasure. Saying so, he approached with her to the place where he had lett *Leon*, but he had drawne himselfe into the bushes, hoping that the Cavalier being gone on his way, his wife would come help him, and make him to be carried away and looked unto. *Fernand* not finding him, made no great diligence to search him, hee imagined, that he was not so hurt as he had believed, and that he was gone to tell his disaster to his companions, to oblige them to revenge him; in this imagination he made hast from thence, and tooke *Cbaritie* with him, hee set her upon her mule, and mounted upon his horse, and tooke the way by which he was come, returning towards *Madrid*, because the nearest place of retreate was that way; otherwise they would have been benighted in the wood, and it may be in danger to finde the companions of *Leon*; it was a great distance betwixt this place and the towne where *Fernand* thought to lodge to passe the night in securitie, which gave him leasure discreetly to informe himselfe, who she was, and of the voyage she made, and who had engaged her into this danger. *Cbaritie* to testifie how much she esteemed her self bounden to his generositie, recited nakedly unto him all that she knew of her self, as well her name and condition, as the accident which was arrived in her lodging,
mode-

rating in the end the shame of her fault with the promises of marriage which I had so solemnly made her.

Fernand hearkened to all this discourse with astonishment and admiration, seeing himselfe to be one of the principall personages in this tragicall History. He remembered himselfe that the next day I was to marry *Cleonte*, the Gentlewoman whereof I told you, and who was to be esteemed, for having amongst other good qualities, neare twenty thousand pounds for her portion, besides the hope of inheriting, yet as much more, from her father. Considering then that it was in his power, to repaire the honour of this faire Gentlewoman, and to bring againe consolation and joy to her mother, he found himselfe engaged in conscience and generositie, not to neglect it; being arrived at their Inne and having taken a little repast, he would let her see how usefull his meeting with her might be to her, yet without declaring what he knew of my project to marry *Cleonte*, for feare of surcharging her with new affliction. Madam, said he, I thanke my good fortune, that she hath this day given me occasion to serve you in such manner as none but a brother could doe. He did not think to have made so just a comparison, for this time I will breake my voyage to *Seville*, whither I was going as well as you, when I met you, and for your sake I will againe take the way to *Madrid*, hoping there to procure you that contentment which you desire from *Don Antonio*. It is a Cavalier whom I know, and whom I hold so religious, that if hee hath sworne to marry you, as I believe he hath, since you say so, he

he will never violate his faith, and it may bee hee would already have done it, if he had known where to have found you; it is therefore I would counsell you to return with me to *Madrid*. At these words *Fernand* saw that *Cbaritie* lifting her eyes up to heaven, made an action which testified that shee had some repugnance to the effect of this proposition, being ashamed to goe alone with a man; and not daring to speak her feeling, she covered with the pretext of fear to be known. No, no, Mistrresse, said he, fear nothing, confide in me, if your quality and beauty would not oblige me to respect, that which I beare to *Antonio*, whose wife I believe you will be, would make me use you with all sort of reverence. I will lodge you in a place where no body shall know you; in the interim I will see this Cavalier, and I assure my self, that you vwill have cause to praise his loyaltye, and my diligence.

Cbaritie was altogether charmed with these spacious consolations; she passed the rest of the night in some repose of spirit, thanking God every moment, for having assisted her with so magnanimous a courage, and disposing her selfe to be conducted by the prudence of this brave Cavalier. At breake of day he went to knock at the door of her chamber, and told her, that it was time to depart, and that they must hast to *Madrid*, if shee would see a good successe of her affaires, she was presently ready, and they went gladly together. They arrived that day at dinner time in an Inne, where they found the Commissary deputed by the President of *Castille* to apprehend the theeves which upon these waies robbed

al l

all the passengers, who, had already taken and hang-
ed up the companions of *Leon*.

Don Baptiste father of *Cleonte*, having appointed
and chosen the day of our marriage, had invited all
his friends for that time, amongst the which *Don*
Ariel the Uncle of *Charitie* was the most confide-
rable after his kindred, this Uncle that lived at *Se-*
ville, and to whom she went to sue to his good na-
ture, to receive her to him, being the onely posses-
sor of the estate of her house settled upon the el-
dest, as I have already told you. He left *Seville* to
come to *Madrid*, and take part of the contentment
of his friends. The next day after the adventure
encountered by *Don Fernand*, hee passed that way,
near unto which *Leon* had drawn and hidden him-
selfe. This miserable wretch having been so long
time abandoned from succour, and almost lost all
his blood, and mortally hurt, decayed by little and
little; seeing that *Fregonde* did not come, and that
he heard passengers goe that way, hee beganne to
make pittifull cries, at the instant that *Don Ariell*
passed by the place where he was. Then this chari-
table and courteous Cavalier made his traine to
stay, and alighting the first, went where hee heard
this lamentable voice; he saw upon the ground a
strong man, enclining to gray, of about fifty years
of age, of a sterne visage, full of scarres, and soiled
with blood, as all the rest of his body was, who
made him this broken discourse, being oppressed
with paine and weaknesse. Sir, said hee, through
Christian charitie have pittie of a miserable sinner,
to whom just heaven this day maketh its vengeance
felt; I have a recitall to make you, whereby I shall
dis-

discharge my conscience (if God assist mee with life and breath to doe it) and give ease to a great family, which I have put in extreame griefe a long while agoe, saying so, a great weaknesse stayed his speech ; *Don Ariell* curious to know what this hurt man would say, sent for water to a little rivulet, that ranne thereby ; they cast it into his face, and he opened his eyes ; then setting him up handsomely against a tree, two men of *Don Ariels* holding him up, he begun again his discourse. Which way doe you go Sir, sayd he ? I go to *Madrid*, answered *Ariel*. Alasse ! Sir, replied the hurt man, you may well oblige then persons of condition that are of that towne, and in so doing render my soul lesse criminall. Speak, my friend, sayd *Ariel*, take courage, I will do it with all my heart. It is thirty years, continued the hurt man, that I have lived in the most infamous profession that is possible for a man to choose. At the beginning I robbed in Townes and Villages, where I sometimes escaped from the hands of Justice, and sometimes also I received severe chastisement therefrom, but yet too gentle for my crimes. In fine, after a perpetuall banishment from *Madrid*, I was constrained to inhabit in the fields and woods, where I robbed the passengers, and many times took away their lives with their goods ; I roved also sometimes about the town, and in the entrie of the night I robbed those that came out thereof, or who arrived late there : About twenty years agoe, one evening, being accompanied with one of my confederates, I found a country woman going towards the towne, who carryed a certaine packet, we would have taken it from her, she made resistance, and begunne to cry,
and

and we killed her, this packet was a fair little boy, which heaven warranted from our cruelty, wee contented our ſelves to take from him ſome little ornaments, which gave me knowledge that this infant was of high birth, we carried him to the next village, and left him in the hands of a poore woman, in abuſing her with a ſpacious lye, to make her receive him. Some moneths after I went diſguiſed into *Madrid*, and ſecretly informed my ſelfe of the loſſe of this infant, they told me the name of his houſe, and that he was the heire of five and twenty hundred pounds a year, knowing that, I durſt not expoſe to ſale the little buſineſſe which I had taken from him, fearing to be diſcovered, ſince that time I have had remorse of conſcience for the great evill and wrong I have done this childe, ſo that having intention to repair one day my crime, I would never part with theſe little jewels, what neceſſity ſoever I was in, alwaies reſerving them to ſerve as markes and testimonies to make the childe known; they were an *Agnus-Dei* enchaſed with gold enamelled, a tooth of Corral, alſo garniſhed with gold, and a little chaine of the ſame mettall, which he had hung about his neck, all theſe are to be found, with the names of his father and mother, and his own, in an old cupbord in my houſe, where I have nevertheleſſe not much inhabited, which is near the Meadows of Saint *Geronime* of *Madrid*, it may be eaſily found in aſking for my name, which is *Leon*, known well enough by my infamy, ſee here the Key of that buſſet in my boſome: *Fregonde* my wife, in ſpeaking this laſt word his voice failed him, his eyes turned, and hee rendered his laſt ſigh.

The

The confusion of *Don Ariel* is not to be represented, so much the beginning and end of this discourse had astonished him.

After so ample a declaration, he had almost no need of this key to verifie that this childe (whereof *Leon* had spoken) was his nephew, and the only sonne of his brother, lost so many yeares agoe: yet for to have a greater clearing therein, he made it to be taken from his neck, where it hung under his shirt: this done he got upon horse back, and followed his way, ignorant by what accident this old theefe had beene hurt, because he had not time to demand it of him, which he thought to have done as soone as he had ended his relation. At the first he passed, he gave notice thereof to the officers of Justice, who neglected to goe thither, thinking there was nothing to pay them for their paines, as it is ordinary, and so it is believed, that *Fregonde* and he, were consumed upon the place, or devoured by savage beasts. *Don Ariel* travelled with the greatest impatience that was possible, extremely desirous to discover the veritie of his doubt. In going he felt himselfe troubled with two contrary feelings. On the one side covetousnesse counselled him, to take the advantage which he had, seeing he only understood this affaire, and to reveale nothing, for feare of being ousted of the estate, which he had possessed so long time, and in danger to be brought to account, having enjoyed this estate, upon the belief which he had, that he was the lawfull successor of his dead brother. On the other side religion perswaded him to reflection if he should come to the knowledge of the true treasure. After having long

since

time ballanced these two temptations, he generously resolved, to yield to the duty of a good Christian, and to the honour whereunto his noblenesse ingaged him. In this intention he entred into *Madrid*, the same day that *Fernand* and *Charitie* arrived there, for they were but one daies journey before him, and in approaching the towne they went very softly, to let the day passe and arrive in the night, for feare that some one might know *Charitie*. *Don Ariel* would see no body of his acquaintance, untill he was cleared upon the declaration, which *Leon* had made him. He lodged in a remote quarter of the towne, and the next day by the authoritie of justice he made the house of *Leon* to be opened, and the cupboard, depositary of the witnesses of his damage, since that they dispossessed him of a great succession. They were found in a Box with a writing containing that they were taken with a child in such a time and place, as also the names of the child, his father, and mother. *Don Ariel* charged himselfe therewith to represent them when it should be required. He might well if he would have exempted himselfe from making such a search, there being none but he that knew the secret that the theefe had discovered to him, but the generositie of his soule, made him doe a rare action of justice, in this occasion; his designe was to goe enquire in all the villages about *Madrid*, following the instructions which *Leon* had given him, thereby to learne something of his nephew, but before he made this search he would see his sister in law, to know if she heard nothing of her sonne, and let also *Don Baptiste* know of his arrivall, who expected him to assist at the wedding

wedding of *Cleonte* his daughter, and mee.

Don Fernand and *Cbaritie* being arrived at *Madrid*, did as *Don Ariell* had done, they lodged in quality of strangers, in a remote Inne, not to be knowne: and whilest *Don Ariell* made his perquisitions, *Fernand* informed himselfe in what estate, my marriage was with *Cleonte*, He was told that it was referred from day to day, expecting the arrivall of a Cavalier of *Seville* the intimate friend of *Don Baptiste*. This newes pleased him very wel, seeing that he was come time enough for the good of *Cbaritie*. They had scarcely beene two dayes in *Madrid*, when *Don Ariell* appeared to the great contentment of *Don Baptiste*, who received him very honourably to his house; the next day he went to visit *Eugenie* his sister in law, whom he found much changed, with the extreame displeasure she tooke for the losse of *Cbaritie*, she made him believe, that she had beene sick, the better to dissemble her sadnesse. After their first complements, he demanded news, of his neece. I have said she for some time put her into a religious house, with one of her cosens, to avoide the trouble which one hath to garde a faire maide, since that they say she may be called so. *Don Ariel* believed her and commended her proceedings. *Seigneur Baptiste* my pretended father in law, arrived thereupon, taking his time to employ the credit of *Don Ariel*, to invite her to my wedding: she excused her selfe in the beginning, but in the end not to give knowledge of the cause of her mourning to her brother in law, she accepted the summons. The night being come, that night I say destinated to take away my liberty, and to ingage me in a voluntary

Captivité

captivitie, the venerable *Eugenie*, came into the assembly: as soone as she cast her eyes upon me, she remembred the tragedy passed, and felt her selfe ceased with extreame sorrow, she wept inwardly, and fained joy in appearance.

Don Fernand advertised of the time of the solemnitie, made a faire habit to be brought to *Charitie*, according to her condition: he prayed her to cloath her selfe therewith, and to adorne her selfe with those jewells, whereof I have made you a description; then making her to put a mantle upon her, he lead her to the house of *Don Baptiste*: he entred with her into the hall wherethe company were, and made her sit in a corner; then coming right to me, *Seigneur Dou Antonio*, said he to me in mine eare, I much commend the preparation you have made for your wedding, and for to gaine time I have brought you her that must be your wife. Do not aske me other explication, because the place where we are is not proper, doe onely that which you owe to your word and the merit of her which I present to you. I was much surprised to see *Don Fernand* so soone returned, and more with his language, which I judged to be a challenge disguised, and in this consideration, without thinking of informing my selfe, what she was he spoke to me of, I told him softly that I had some reply to make him upon that subject, and that he should goe stay for me at a place which I named to him. He went out very discreetly, and I incontinently after, but we were no sooner out of the company, but that they thought that I had a quarrell. My brother which you see here, ran upon the instant after us, so did also *Don Ariel* and *Don Baptiste*: they overtooke us in the

streets and brought us back againe to the house, yet ignorant of the cause of our quarrell, for we fained to be come out upon another designe, but *Don Charles* found us not, we sent after him, but could heare nothing of him, since that night I have not seene him untill I met him at *Cartagene*: During all these alarmes, *Charitie* kept her place where *Fernand* had left her, and when she begun to know that this assembly was made for my marriage with *Clemente*, she learned at the same time, that I was gone out to fight with a stranger, she judged that it was *Don Fernand*. Then seeing me on one side to violate my promises, and on the other side in designe to take away the life of her defendor, so violent a sorrow ceazed upon her heart, that she fell in a swoond. As soone as this weaknesse was perceived, she was encompassed with all the ladies, which ran to assist her, and amongst the rest *Eugenie* her mother, who (having knowne her) remained immoveable, and dumbe as a statue: I know not whether it was with excesse of joy to see her, or with extreamitie of sorrow, to know that she was come alone with a stranger.

The women confused in the contemplation of this accident, caused *Charitie* and her mother to be carryed into another chamber apart, when another motion happened at our returne: A poor woman that served in the house of *Don Baptiste*, as we entered into the hall, knew *Don Fernand*, and without other ceremony, came and cast her self upon his neck crying, ah, my sonne! my dear childe! is it possible that I see thee living? All those that were not busied about *Charitie* and *Eugenie*, encompassed *Don Fernand*, and this woman, astonished to see them

embrace with so much joy. They could not comprehend how a woman of so base condition should call a young man, who had the port and habits of a Cavalier her sonne. Many of those that at the beginning made some esteem of *Don Fernand*, regarded him then with scorn and derision. In brief, we were so confused with so many troubles and strange successes, that we scarcely knew one another. In fine, *Cleonte*, adorned as a Bride to be married, presently came to *Epinelle*, so this poor woman was called, and demanded of her the explication of this action; and this woman in the presence of the whole assembly sayd, that shee had brought up *Fernand* as her childe, having nourished him with her milke, he being put into her hands by two unknown men, which brought him to her one night, letting her know, that it was a childe of a good family, and the rest, that I have told you those theeves sayd to her, adding that her poverty had constrained him to quit the village, and come and serve in *Madrid*. *Don Ariel*, who behinde the others hearkened to this recitall with admiration, calculating the time, and putting all the circumstances together, with those which *Leon* had told him, came to finish the interpretation of these ænigma's, he demanded the name of this woman, and of the village where shee dwelt when they brought her this childe, and seeing that they were the same which were contained in the writing which he had found in *Leons* cupboard, he looked more carefully upon the face of *Don Fernand*; where he observed all the features of his dead brother, his blood begun to be moved, and not being able longer to resist the force of his affection, which pressed him, he came with his armes open to *Don*

Fernand calling him his deere nephew; and without other words, he was so ravished with joy, he remained long time imbracing him, and weeping upon his face: oppressing all the assistants with new admiration, after the greatest effects of this transport of joy, *Don Ariel* sent for the *Agnus Dei*, and the tooth of corall, which I have told you of, to make them knowne to *Eugenie*. They caused her to come being yet moved with the recovery of her daughter; whose story *Don Ariel* her uncle was yet ignorant of, no one daring to tell it him: looke here, sister said he to her in shewing her these little ornaments, doe ye know this? O heaven! cryed she in regarding them, thou sellest me deere the contentment thou hast now given me, since that without any intermission thou puttest me in minde of the losse of my child, in representing to me these little gages. Ah! where art thou my deare *Fernand*. There he is replied *Don Ariel*, in taking him by the hand, *Eugenie* had like to have swounded with this suddaine apparition, Ah God! said she: then (remaining as if she had beene charmed) she began to contemplate him, and felt upon the instant, a motion at her heart which confirmed the veritie of what she heard. On the other side *Fernand* was in so strange a confusion, that he knew not how to interpret these words and actions. In fine after she had remained a good space in this enchantment, she broke silence, and said, that she knew him to have a perfect resemblance of his father; but to make her the more certaine of the truth, she remembred that at the houre of the birth of *Fernand* and *Charitie*, they being twins, they were fastened together by the heele, and having disjoyned them, there then rested

ed to either of them a marke in that place : then *Don Fernand* begun to understand all his history, being overjoyed to know that he was issued of so noble a lineage, fell upon his knees before *Eugenie*; Madame said he, if there neede no other testimony but that, to make me to be acknowledged your sonne, permit me to kisse your feete in that qualitie; I have the signe you speake of. *Eugenie* transported to see so many marvels upon the sudden, had like to have given up her soule in kissing and embracing *Don Fernand*: having a little given over their embracings, they went into another chamber, and in the presence of *Don Ariel*, he let them see the marke which gave the last clearing to their doubts, and made *Don Fernand* to be acknowledged lawfull heire of the estate which his uncle had possessed so many yeares. After this *Charitie* was brought into the chamber to augment this great joy, and to take part thereof, *Eugenie* made her to imbrace *Don Fernand* as her brother, whom she had heard her mother so often lament. In briebe they were all so full of felicitie in this prodigious encounter, that they scarcely knew themselves. They made amongst themselves some short recitalls of their adventures, for their proper satisfaction, untill they should come into a more convenient place to declare them at large, as I have done; *Don Ariel* brought them all three againe into the hall, publishing to all the company, the miracle which God had done in their favour, so that all their friends participated of their contentment, and I more then their kindred themselves. After this *Don Fernand* came to me; sir said he, very modestly, I did not thinke I had beene so much interessed in the discourse I held you but

even now, I made it being urged thereunto by an instinct, whose cause I knew not; but at the present since the affaire toucheth me so neerely, and that I see that it was blood which excited me to sollicite you, I begin it againe and with much more affection. I cannot think that a generous soule, as I have alwaies knowne yours to be, would disguise a treachery under honest promises, where heauen was called to witnesse the designe you had to accomplish them. Words tye men; before they are spoken they are voluntary, but being given, they are necessary. If you be of another opinion, you wrong the noblesse of your courage, and much prejudice your honour: and being your friend so much as I am, it would extreemely trouble me that you should doe any action whereby your reputation might be stained. You know the discourse you have held to my sister, and the scandall that is thereupon arrived, you are now obliged to effect it, as well for her proper satisfaction, as the generall reputation and honour of our familie. And for my part I am perswaded that you had already done it, if you had knowne where to have found *Charitie*. She is of condition equall to yours; her vertue was in a high degree of perfection before the fault you made her commit, her beauty cometh, not short of the most considerable, and if I say not that she is incomparable, it is because I would not offend the respect which I beare to *Cleonte*. Besides all these considerations, you will adde to the qualitie of friend which you honour me with, that of brother and most humble servant. If you have any scruple for her absence, although you are the cause thereof, I will oblige my selfe to render you satisfaction.

All these reasons seemed to me so honest and just, and my conscience was so moved therewith, that justifying unto him my consentment by my silence, I went to embrace *Charitie*, and in the presence of the whole company renewed my vows to her, wherewith her mother and uncle were greatly rejoyced. *Don Ariel* made a voluntary resignation to *Don Fernand*, of all the estate which by right apper- tained to him, and moreover he made him his heire after his death: & the more to oblige me to esteeme his neece, and to take away the trouble I might have for being excluded from the riches which I might have possessed in marrying *Cleonte*, he augmented the portion of *Charitie* with eight thousand pounds, part of the profits which he had received in enjoying *Fernands* estate, who approved this liberality. I went to make complements to *Don Baptiste* and *Cleonte*, excusing my selfe upon the beliefe which I had that *Charitie* was dead when I sought for their alliance, but she being living, my conscience obliged me to maintaine to her the promises which I had made her. That if they would receive *Don Fernand* in my place, they would gaine much by the change; and thereupon I exaggerated the prayes of his good countenance and merit. *Don Baptiste* liked well this proposition; he communicated it to *Don Ariel*, who testified that he esteemed himselfe most happy if *Cleonte* would permit, that friendship and kindred might be united; and that for his nephew he did not doubt but to finde him wholly disposed there- unto, it being the greatest honour and fortune he could aspire unto. *Cleonte* formed easily her obe- dience unto the will of her father, and *Fernand* prai- sing my invention, consented to the desires of his

uncle, so that wee were married at the same time, by the approbation of all our friends and kindred. Behold deere *Fenise* the successe of my loves; if the recitall thereof hath beene too long pardon me; I did it but to divert you from thinking of what you have left at *Cartagene*. It is now my brothers part, to tell us the occasion, which made him absent himselfe from *Madrid*, and not participate of all these marvellous felicities.

Fenise found this history extreemly pretty and well entermixed, saying that for its raritie it merited to be consecrated to posteritie; which gave subject to *Charles* to endeavour to merit like praise, in recounting his fortunes: which he thus begun.

THE HISTORY OF DON CHARLES AND VIOLANTE.

BEing gone out after my brother upon the opinion that we had, that *Don Fernand* had called him out to fight with him, as he hath already told you, I made many turnes in the towne, without meeting with him; In the end I met a servant of a gentleman a friend of mine, that was in the assembly at *Don Baptists* house, who assured me that my brother was returned thither, with him against whom it was believed he had the quarrell, that *Don Baptiste* accompanied, with other Cavaliers amongst whom his master was, had found them, and carried them back to his house. Upon these words I went no further, but returned towards the house, being desirous to know the occasion of this rumor.

In

In passing through a street a little remote from the commerce of people, I saw at the doore of a certaine house, a woman couered with a mantle: as I passed she coughed softly which I tooke for a signe, that she would stay me, and without expecting a second time I came to her, and begun like a young man to treat her as a common woman, thinking that at that houre no other were to be met in the streets, she retired her selfe a little, and sayed to me, Cavalier, I pardon the evill opinion you have conceived of me, seeing me alone and so late in this place; I am a woman of condition afflicted with an extreame displeasure, and have neede of the assistance of a man of valour: the opinion which I have that you are so, hath caused me to call you. This manner of speaking made me give credit to her words, and although it was night, I saw that which made me judge he to be a person of respect, so that changing my stile and actions, I said, Madame since that your discretion hath prevented my excuses they would be now superfluous, I will therefore let alone submissive words, and offer you the effect of a most faithfull service. Sir answered she, although I doe not doubt of the sincerity of your offers, I should be yet much more assured, if I had the honour to know your name. I am called said I *Don Charles de Valasquez*. Ah God! replied she: then remaining silent she seemed to doubt if she should discover to me her designe. What is the matter Madame, continued I, is that name odious unto you? Alas Sir said she, I honoured it extreemly, but to tell you the truth, the feare I have to be knowne makes me to desire, that you had not stayed, but passed on your way and followed your first intention

tions. This answer made me the more curious to know who she was. I then gave her my word not to informe my selfe of any thing, but blindly to obey her in all she would ordaine me, without enterprising any thing that might displease her, praying her not to feare to declare to me her intentions, protesting to serve her couragiously, and never to reveale any secret she should trust me with. Then she told me that she was intimate friend to *Violante*, a lady whom I served, who triumphed over my libertie, and treated me rigorously, although I had rendered her a thousand testimonies of my passion. She had divers time prayed me by others to desist from my sute, telling me my labour would be lost. Seeing then that this gentlewoman said she was the intimate friend of my ingratefull mistresse, my desire to serve her animated my courage, perswading my selfe that I should oblige her, to render me some good office towards this cruell one. Vpon the assurances which you give me of your discretion, and the freedome whereunto your blood obligeth you, replied she; follow me, I am going into a house about an affaire of great importance: you must, if you please attend me at the street doore, resolved to let no one enter, and doe not trouble your selfe with the noyse you may heare there if any happen: but if any one offer to goe out, let him goe freely, without informing your selfe of him. As she had finished these instructions, we arrived at the doore of an house of eminency: she entred therein, and I finding my selfe ingaged to assist her, put my selfe in ambush neere the doore to execute her ordinances, I presently heard the noise she told me of, and almost at the same instant a man came out, having

a cloake, and a coloured hat, which came so farre upon his head; that the brims covered his face; for it was not so obscure, but that I could well observe this, hee came out as if hee were in choler, which I knew by these words which he spake, thus impudent women ought to be treated; there needs no other misfortune to our blood, but to have it mingled with that of an infamous woman; he was scarcely gone, when this Lady whom I had accompanied came out also, and coming to me all in teares, *Seigneur Don Charles* sayd she, I come from making the last prooffe of my misfortunes; at the present I have need that you carry me to some friends house of yours, where I may put off the cloathes I weare, I presently carried her to a house, in the Master whereof I had great confidence; she went alone into a chamber, put off her womans habit, and came out in mans, she praised me to give her my sword, and to take another for my self. I extreemly marvelled to see all these strange actions, yet without enquiring after any thing, I humbly obeyed in all she required, yet with great desire to know what would become of these divers changes. We left the town, she went the first, and I followed her step by step; she went into a close, a little out of the highway, in the middle whereof was a Dove-coate, she made me hide my self behind it, and she kept a little distance from it, as if she expected some one, wishing me to come to her at the first sign that she should make me, saying that she should then have need of my person. I remained planted behind the Dove-coate, like a bugbeare of hemp-stalkes, my spirits much confused with all these mysteries,
and

and without being able to penetrate into the intentions of this woman, although I had time enough to meditate upon these actions; for I was neare an houre in keeping this sentinell. In the end, I heard some one to come very deliberately, I watched, and perceived that it was the same man that I had seen come out of the house whither this woman had carried me, and left me at the door, he approaching to her, at a little distance held her this language, *Don Charles*, said he, before we come to the effect which hath brought us hither, I must tell you, that it was not necessary to make me come into the field about a thing that I would easily have done in the town. You stand upon two points in the writing which was given me this morning from you, the first, that I should know that you love *Violante*; the second, that you are resolved to make me quit the pretensions I have for her; I will satisfie you upon both: For the first head, I will tell you that I am troubled, that you have passion for so poore a subject; and for the second, that it will not at all trouble me to quit that which I never had, and which is as hatefull to me as death: You ought therefore to be content for this regard. But since that you already know, that I never come into these places to return without doing the action for which we are come, we must measure our swords with protestation on my part, that I doe not this action but because you have called me thereunto, and that I would not doe it for the consideration of *Violante*, nor for all the women in the world, not believing that there is amongst them all one chaste and wise, but she that hath never been courted, nor sought after. I did not believe ever to have met with any

ship

thing that could have so astonish'd me, nor put me in so much choler, as I was in, to heare this discourse, as well because it was address'd to me, as because it was made in scorne of *Violante*, whom I passionately loved, to this being joyned the outrage wherewith he offended the whole sex, saying that there was no woman that had vertue when she was solicited to vice, I was much moved to goe correct this insolent, but feared to violate the promises which I had made to her that brought me thither, yet considering that my honour was engaged to chastise the impudence of this man, I dispos'd my selfe to break the enchantment which held me behinde the Dove-coate, when this woman seeing her adversary come towards her with his sword in his hand, went to him, and being come almost within the reach of their swords, discharged a Pistoll at his breast, and cast him to the ground, without being able to offend her, or give her one onely word, I immediately ran in to see if there was any means to know him, but it was not light enough, then going towards this valiant woman; What is the matter, Madame, sayd I, what have you done? It is nothing, answered she: Doe you know this man? Not to my knowledge, said I: It is, replied she, the Traytor *Don Baltazar de Oroasco*. I knew him, then said I, he was a Cavalier which I have reason to complaine of for many evill offices which hee hath rendered me. Well, continued she (whilst her enemy rendered his last sigh) since that you know who he is, you shall also know who I am, and the subject which hath oblig'd me to treat him thus.

I doe not thinke it strange, that you have not
known

known me, having never yet spoken to me, nor only heard the sound of my voice untill this present. Know then that I am the same *Violante*, whose friend I told you I was, it is neare two years agoe, that *Don Baltazar*, covering his treason under civill propositions, begunne to render me proofes of his affections, and to sollicite me to be pleased with his suite, time and perseverance obliged me to hearken to him, and to wish him well. In that time my mother rendered the tribute which every one oweth to nature, leaving a great succession in the town of *Naples*, of which place she was native. My father desiring to take order about that estate, was constrained to make a voyage thither; at his departure he left me with one of my Aunts, to have care of me, and divert me from the trouble which I might have during his absence. All these circumstances gave me more libertie for love to lodge within my breast, and to *Don Baltazar* the more easily to find the way to my chamber. He deceived me with a promise of marriage, which he let mee read, where I saw that he took all the court of Heaven to witness, and abandoned himselfe to a thousand curses if he failed to accomplish it, the least whereof was his prayers to God to make him dye by the hands of the person, whose life was the most dear to him. Not long after he tooke possession of the most precious thing which was in my power, and a few dayes after he despised it; and as his design had been but to deceive me, since that he was satisfied, he made no more account of me, nor to visit me as he had done before. Seeing my selfe treated so unworthily, I sought all meanes possible to bring him to the accomplishment of his duty and promises, but the
more

more I endeavoured by faire 'meanes to oblige him to doe me reason, the more I excited him to derision, and the more I experimented his ingratitude and my mistfortune. In the interim his father treated of a marriage for him, and he did not forbear to consent thereunto, without thinking that hee could not doe it, being already engaged to me. I sent divers times to pray him to take the paines to come to see me, to know from his owne mouth, if the bruit which ranne of his marriage was true, but he alwaies mocked at the message and the person which carried it; from day to day the terme of his marriage approached, and my despite augmented. I found meanes to speak with him in a Church, and to put him in minde of his words, my believe, and his written promise; but the barbarian impudently answered me, that she that had not merit enough to make a friend of, was not to bee received for a wife. Consider a little the impudence of this brutall; I thinke I had then (if the respect of the holy place had not retained me) scratched him by the face, I was so transported with choler, and so sensible of this outrage, I knew not what to resolve upon, nor to whom to have recourse to; and to weigh me down with griefe and sadnesse, I vvas told yesterday, that within three dayes his proposed marriage ought to be effected. Thereupon I had a desire to hinder it by way of Justice, but upon the instant I represented to my self, that if my opposition did not take place, I should but publish my dishonour, and to speak the truth, if this doubt had not retained me, my despite and courage had dissuaded me, judging it too much honour to this famous man, to constrain him to doe that which
he

he ought to have entreated for. After many considerations, I thought that I ought not to communicate it to any one, for feare of hazarding the innocence of others, betwixt mine errour and his crime; so that this morning I sent him a writing in your name, wherein I sayd you would expect him all alone here at this houre, either to see him with his sword in his hand, or to oblige him to quit the pretensions which he had for me. In using this stratagem, I imagined, either that he would see me this day to despise you, knowing that you loved me, or that he would not doubt but that you called him to combate, knowing that you were his enemy. But having seen the day passe, without hearing from him, I caused him to be so well watched this evening, that it was reported to me, that he was in the house whither I lead you, wherein dwelleth one of his friends. Having received this advice, I furnished my selfe with what was necessary to execute my premeditated vengeance, or at the worst to sacrifice my life to the reparation of mine honour. But before I would come to this extremitie, I desired to see this disloyall yet once, to attempt to reduce him to reason and his duty: I therefore went out by the favour of the night for this effect, but considering that all men are dispenced from respect when they meet a woman alone in the streets, and in the darke, I stayed some ten steps from our house, expecting that there should passe some one, whom I might judge my selfe able to entreat to serve me for scout. It seemeth that heaven, amongst the intelicities which oppressed me, would gratifie me with the good fortune of your encounter, since
tha

that there had already passed three men, of fashion good enough, before you came, to whom I spoke not a word, but as if you had beene reserved for to render me this pious office, my genius excited me to call you, when you came neere me.

The prayer that I made to you, when you stayed *Sentinel* at that doore, which was not to trouble your selfe with the noyse which you might heare, was groundd upon the hope which I had to receive satisfaction in this place, for the injuries of this disloyall, if he did not content me; but two men that were with him hindred mine enterprise, for I imagined, they might stay the blow which I would give him, or at the least having executed it, they would put me into the hands of justice. Seeing then that I ought not to hazard my selfe so rashly; I approached to this ingrate with the action of a suppliant, but in stead of receiving as he ought; onely in consideration of my quality, and to attribute to an excesse of love, the resolution which I had taken to come finde him in this company, he tooke occasion therefrom, to treat me as a publique woman, adding to the infamy of my violated honour, the shame of seeing my face massacred, by his rash hands. Is there in the whole world a woman of so little courage, that could support so many injuries, without giving an exemplary chastisement to all ingrates? Animated then with a furious and just anger, I resolved to revenge my selfe, yet this wicked man is happy amongst his misfortunes, that he hath received his death from a hand which he hath so often kissed and almost adored. If I haue not employed you in this action *Seigneur Don Charles*, it was not that I believed other-

Y

wife

wife, but that you would have generously enterprised it; but I repute your blood too noble, to balance it with that of a traytor. Although I have taken away his life with a pistoll, I doe not believe that I have used foule play, for without that there would have beene too great inequality betwixt my weaknesse, and his strength, my rock and his sword, what ever it was, my victory ought not to have beene doubtfull, otherwise I should not have beene revenged. In fine he is dead, and God hath permitted it to be so, to accomplish the imprecations which he called upon him, and for to chastise him for having violated the faith, where he had called to witnesse the Almighty, his glorious mother, and all angelicall powers. There is no doubt but you & I shall be suspected for his death; you because every one knoweth, that you are his enemy and rivall; and I for having taken vengeance of the perfidiousnesse which all the world knowes he hath done me; for my part I will enjoy the vaine glory of my vengeance, and avoid if I can the paine I may suffer being accused, before my justifications may be received, therefore I am resolved to absent my selfe. If you will goe with me, I shall testifie unto you the esteem which I have of your person: and how sensible I am of the obligations which I have to you, I have already provided what is necessary for that purpose. There is an ancient servant of my fathers which attends me at his house, with jewells of great price, and some money, which I have given him to keepe, & three good horses. See if your heart wisheth to doe it: time presseth, and permits us to consult no longer, things the least premeditated, often times issue the best. Admiring her generositie, considering her

her judicious reasons, and above all suffering my selfe to be carried away with the love I bore her, which was newly increased by the defeat of the enemy, which she had taken away from me, I resolved to follow her, with promise never to abandon her. Vpon the instant we went to the mans house she had spoken of, who was well advanced in yeares, but yet sound, strong of body, and of great experience. We tooke these three horses, which *Violante* had prepared for to save her selfe with this man and a woman, not thinking of encountring me, and with the pearles, diamonds, and mony, we put our selues diligently into the rode of *Toledo* and arrived there the next morning. It was not judged expedient for us to stay there, any longer, but whilest *Orambel* (so was our guide called) could buy us poore country habits. With this equigage, we gained the mountaines neere to *Toledo* with designe to buy goods and flockes, and inhabit there, as we were in qualitie of country people, untill we had given order for our affaires. The age of *Orambel* agreed very well with ours for our plot we had made, to say that he was our father, he had the care of all our affaires, and went sometimes disguised to *Madrid*, to learne what was said of the things wherein we had interest; for which cause we were not willing to goe further from the court. I tooke the name of *Lizeron*, and *Violante*, the name of *Iacinthe*, the better to disguise us. We lived there in great repose, employing the time we two in perfectioning our loves after the manner of the shepheards described in *Diana de Montemayor*, whilst that *Orambel* our adopted father governed household affaires.

During our abode there, there arrived many strange

encounters to us, which I will not enterprise to recount unto you, fearing to trouble you; yet it is almost impossible for me to hinder my self from reciting one adventure that happened to us one day. Then *Don Charles* made the discourse of his encounter with *Fenise*, as it hath been said in the beginning of the first book; adding in continuing thus we diverted the troubles of a country life, where the daies were very long, and great repose displeasing. *Violante* often received letters from her Father, which *Orambel* went to fetch at her Aunts house; amongst others, she received one, wherein her father let her know, that hee was kept in his bed by a sicknesse, which the Physitians presaged would endure a long time, and therefore he could not return into *Spaine*; that it was necessary for her presently to come into *Italy*, to take possession of his goods, to the end that if she remained an Orphan, she should not bee a poore one. *Violante* durst not undertake so long a voyage, finding her selfe then indisposed, she intreated me to take it for her, saying, that it would not be unbeseeming, taking the quality of her husband. I was enflamed every day more and more with her beauty, considering that mine honour could not be interessed in marrying of her, since that if *Don Baltazar* had deceived her, she was sufficiently satisfied therefore; and besides, that she had never given him that liberty, if she had not believed him to be her husband. I served my self of her proposition, & told her, that since that she avowed me to take the quality of husband, I did not desire to be a lyar, and that if she pleased she might make it good. She that desired it as much as I, gave mee her hand in the face of the Church, and I married her as the widow
of

of a Cavalier, disabusing those of the village from the opinion which wee had given them, that wee were brother and sister; and a moneth after J went to *Naples*, with witnesses of my marriage, which were Letters from *Violante* and her Aunt, which made me receive a gracious welcome from my Father in law. The fear which he had to die without regulating his affaires, obliged him to install me in the inheritance of a great estate; and six weekes after he gave me leave to depart, counselling mee to return to my wife, whom he recommended carefully to me: I disposed my selfe to obey his will, and the solicitations of my love; but in my returne by sea, the effects of my intentions were hindered, by being taken captive & carried into a country, where God had done me the favour to let me know *Fenise*, that I might remaine obliged unto him all my life, for as he hath delivered me from a constrained captivitie, so he hath engaged me for ever to be his voluntary slave. But if with this good fortune, and that to see my brother *Don Antonio* in health, I could joyn the contentment of seeing againe my dear *Violante*, I should esteem my self at the height of a most perfect felicity.

This pleasant narration left those that heard it in good humour, and particularly *Fenise*, knowing him who had saved his life in the mountaines; hee recounted the successe thereof, saying that he was the Cavalier which was hurt, and that that which hindered *Don Charles* from then knowing him, was because the first time he had seen him, he had his face all covered with blood. *Don Charles* was extremely glad of this knowledge. *Don Antonio* his brother told him upon the instant that the death

of *Don Baltazar* had been attributed to a certaine Gallant of that Ladyes to whom his friends would have married him; and that neither he nor *Violante* had ever been suspected.

After that they had admired the marvellous accidents of these two histories, every one kept silence, seeing that *Fenise* prayed *Marcell* to entertain the rest of their way, in telling them the cause of his voyage, when *Marcell* courteously agreeing to what they desired of him, addressed the beginning of his discourse to *Don Charles*, and said thus.

*The Prodigious History of a Sonne
and his Mother.*

MY voyage and encounters have been partly grounded upon your adventures; and if the history I am going to recount unto you is lesse pleasant than yours, J dare believe that it will be found more worthy of admiration.

I had a paternall Uncle in *Cartagene*, a man revered for his vertues, and respected for his prudence and venerable aspect; he married with a gentlewoman of noble extraction, but whose chastity was not too certaine, she was called *Constance*; the effects of things doe not alwaies agree with their names. He had a sonne by her totally opposed to her modesty. The debauches of *Don Garcia*, so was this cosen of mine called, much tormented him; he endeavoured in his infancy to repress them by chastisements, and in his youth by sweet remonstrances; but seeing he could not prevaile, he resolved to send him into *Flanders*, that he might there employ his valour (whereof he shewed some signes)

against the enemies of the faith, and for the service of his King; for there are no occasions so glorious as those wherein one may render proofe of zeale and courage. He gave him Money, and Letters of favour to put his person in consideration; but these Letters had no vertue, nor his Money was not spent in *Flanders*, but at *Madrid* the Court of *Spaine*, making by this meanes experiment of the great difference which there is betwixt an ill inclination and a generous one. Vitious persons have no great trouble to meet with their like: *Don Garcia* found incontinently many friends of his humour, and amongst others he was very great with one *Don Baltazar* the very same that *Seigneur Charles* hath spoken of, and whom *Violante* made to feele the effects of her name and vengeance, and yet very justly. In time mine Uncle knew the little satisfaction which my cosen gave to his desire, and his proper birth and without speaking any thing thereof to his wife, for fear of troubling her, suffered his breast to be gnawed with extreame displeasure. In fine, hearing too often of his pernicious life, he fell sick, and in a little time died. *Constance* was left Widow with great riches, and also furcharged with much affliction, as well for the losse of her husband, as for the feare which she had, seeing him dye for sorrow, that hee had heard of the death of his sonne in some encounter of warre; for she believed him to bee in *Flanders*, and that hee had hidden this accident from her to exempt her from sorrow. I was at *Toledo* when they writ to me of the decease of mine Uncle, and because I knew that *Don Garcia* was at *Madrid*, I presently went to let him know thereof; I found him hidden in the house

of one of his friends, because he was sought after diligently, being accused for the death of *Don Baltazar*, he being the same night he was slaine at his house, and there it was where he had treated *Violante* so unworthily, as *Don Charles* hath sayd. In the doubt wherein I was, that he was culpable of this murder, although he swore to me that he was innocent, I counselled him to goe into his country, to doe which he easily resolved. He took the way to *Cartagene*, entertaining his spirit with the actions that *Don Baltazar* had done the last time hee saw him at his house; and in remembring the words which he spoke that night, and in many other occasions (that there was no chaste women but those who had never been solicited) he would make prooffe of this unjust opinion in the person of his Mother. Do but see this execrable project.

For this effect he passed by the town of *Murcia*, with intention to serve himself of a young advocate of that towr, whom he had often seen at *Madrid*, in the company of Gallants, and men of pastime, amongst whom he passed for a good wit and a well spoken man. My Cousen found him out, and let him know, that he was returning to *Cartagene* the place of his birth, and before that he would make his arrivall known, he had a desire to prove the chastitie of a Widow, a Kinswoman of his, and of whom he had an ill suspition; but because this was an experience which he could not make alone, he stood in need of the intermission of a friend, that he had addressd himselfe to him, having knowne him most able, and judging him very discreet, to intreat him to assist him in this designe. The Advocate who was of [a wanton humour, having
heard

heard this proposition, imagined that if this widow was fair, he would sound her to the last proof, and in this thought he promised to *Don Florisell* to serve him in whatsoever he would, and should judge expedient. Before that I passe any further in this narration, you must know that my cosen had taken the name of *Florisell* in arriving at *Madrid*, for feare of being known, and that his father might not know that he was there, & not in *Flanders* whither he had sent him. This disguising of his name, and whereby I shall call him in this discourse, did much favour my cosens abominable design, in that the Advocate could not know, that this was his proper mother whom he would affront; so that in this ignorance and gallant determination, they departed together from *Murcia*, and went to *Cartagene*.

They lodged in an Inne neare enough the lodging of *Constance*, where they changed their cloathes. *Florisell* tooke the Advocates, saying hee was his man, and the Advocate his, passing for a Cavalier of *Arragon*, of the towne of *Pamplone*, called *Don Felix Oxoria*, who was come to *Cartagene* to hearken after news of one of his brothers, who was a slave at *Maroc* in *Barbaria*. The next day after their arrivall *Florisell* carried *Felix* into a Church, where he shewed him the face of the Widow of whom he had spoken, who came every day to Masse into that place; she had forty yeares of age, but her beauty and features covered almost a third part of them, that if she had sayd she had had but twenty five, one would not have thought her to have had more, regarding her complexion. Going from the Church, *Florisell* shewed him the house where she dwelt; after which the Advocate being clothed

thed like a Cavalier, grew acquainted with a chambermaide of *Constances*, and by force of money, wherewith *Don Florisel* furnished him, obliged her speake well of him to her mistrisse. This maide succeeded so well in her perswasions, that she obliged *Constance* to cast her eyes upon him in the same church where he had already seene her. Finding him of handsome fashion, she permitted her servant to serve for enterpreter of the passions of this new Cavalier, and to present her with the letters which he gave her. Having shewn his wit by his writings which was capable to have moved feelings of love in the heart of those who were never so little disposed thereunto, and who would give themselves liberty to reade them: he got acquainted with *Constance*, let her know his passion, and afterwards their familiaritie became so great, that she promised to give him the last favour in one night which she appointed.

Florisel exactly instructed of all the circumstances of these assaults, seeing that the place was going to be rendered, prayed *Felix* to stay there and to let him alone with the rest. Then at the time appointed for this generous exploit, *Florisel* changed againe with *Felix*, he became againe advocate, and the other Cavalier he tooke againe his habits, and name of *Garcia*, and went to his mothers house, putting himselfe in the place of *Felix*, who stayed behinde in the Inne. The maide was ready at the doore, who doubted not but this was he whom he expected; because he wore the same cloathes and was of the same height of *Felix*. She led him without light, or speaking word, right to the bed of *Constance*: for although she was mistresse of her house

house, yet she was not so disordered that she durst take a greater libertie for feare, the other domestiques should perceive her sensuality. This chambermaide helped him to uncloath himselfe, then without speaking word, he lay downe by his mother who received him with like silence. If he entered into the bed as mute, he remained there as suddenly growne lame: he passed the rest of the night in seeming to sleepe, and at the rising of *Aurora* which approached to see this fearefull couple of lovers. *Don Garcia*, arose and dressed himselfe to bee gone without being knowne. *Constance* his mother seeing his actions, and that he had lien insensible by her all the night, imagined that he was enchanted, or else that he had taken some distaste with her; but rather believing the later, although she was extreemely neat and proper, she called him as he opened the doore of her chamber. Sir said she, very low, I cannot believe that you are he which hath used so many writings and amorous devises, to obtaine this cherishable permission which I have given you, other wayes your effects are much different from your words: farewell, Sir farewell, I commend your continence as a vertue wich renders you incomparable. Yet said she in coming out of bed, and hindring him from opening the doore, before I gave you your leave, I would desire to know the cause of your excessive retention, for provided that it doth not proceede from distaste or contempt of my person, I am well satisfied. *Garcia* seeing himselfe constrained to speake: Madame said he, your suspicions are most true, & my effects different from those which your sensuality promised it selfe, for I am much different from him you expected. Then
horriour

horror which I have had to pollute my fathers bed, and her blood who conceived me, hath obliged me to this respective retention. What Madame needes there so many words to make you know your sonne *Garcia*; when unhappy *Constance* had heard this discourse, and name; shame ceazed her so violently, that she made but one cry. Ah, God! said she, in falling halfe dead upon her bed without being able to speake or breath of long time. In the interim *Garcia* having made her chambermaide to come in, left the house, and that very houre gave money and a horse to this *Advocate* that had served him as instrument of this scandall, thanking him for the good office which he had rendered him, and made him returne to *Murcia*, without telling him the effect of his stratagem. *Constance* being returned from her trance, found her selfe in a burning feaver, which being mingled with the griefe of her repentance pressed her to appeare before the soveraign Judge, so that from the time her sonne had left her, untill the instant of her death, she had but leisure to receive the sacrament (where she seemed to be very sensible and to repent her fault) and to make her testament; dying without any one knowing the cause of her end. *Don Garcia* considering that his impious curi-fitie, had killed her, durst not appeare neither before her nor else where during her sicknesse: but incontinent after her decease, he made himselfe seene as arriving from *Flanders*, they opened the testament, where *Garcia* was found disinherited; he without regarding the ordinance of his mother would possesse himselfe of the succession, but he was hindred by two of the cosens of the defunct. He had with them both words and blowes, and in this difference

rence, he outraged Gentlewomen his Kinswomen with so many insolencies, injuries, and intemperances, that it was decreed against him, that hee should bee put into prison, where hee staid a long while, because no body regarded him, all that hee undertooke issued very ill, and in the end seeing himself abandoned by all the world, and pressed with extream necessity, besides the incommodities of prison, he had recourse to me, and writ to me, conjuring me to assist him in the misery which he endured, being abandoned of all his kindred and friends. This letter was given me, and many others, wherein he reiterated the same prayers, but I was not much moved to assist him, I was insensibly growne into a certaine negligence, which many times hindered me from undertaking this voyage. I imagine that heaven permitted it to be so, to chastise him for the evill he had done, in being the cause of the death of her, which was the cause of his life, after the soveraign author of all things. Seeing himselfe reduced to so great misery, so far that he was not visited in his chamber by any but the other prisoners, he had his heart touched with a very sensible repentance; judging that all these miseries were come unto him by divine punishment: those who brought him his meat, found him alwaies sighing and weeping. Desiring then to appease the anger of God, and do penance for his fault, he made a Vow with a good heart to employ a whole yeare in visiting on foot all the holy Sanctuaries of *Spaine*, if it pleased God to deliver him from the miseries wherein hee was. From that houre that he had thus acknowledged himselfe, all things came to him according to his wish, every one beganne to pittie him. I arrived

rived at *Cartagene* with intent to endeavour to serve him, and before J saw any of my kindred, J went to visit him in prison, where after having embraced him with teares in his eyes, he recounted to me from point to point the prodigious extravagancie which he had done, which he believed was the originall of his misfortunes. I blamed, and chid him rudely for suffering himself to be carried away with such a folly, and seeing the extreame sorrow which he had for it, J became the vigilant solicitour of his affairs. By my intermission, they (whom he had offended pardoned him) seeing that they had a sufficient reparation) having kept him two years a prisoner for not penetrating into the judgements of God, they beleaved that it was onely by their meanes that *Garcia* had suffered this paine. Not being content with having gotten him out of prison, J would see the clause of the Testament of his mother, and the cause of his dis-inheriting; having examined it with counsell, we learned that the Law deprived from succession those children who layed violent hands upon their Fathers or mothers, or who attempted upon their lives, and as the adversaries of *Garcia* could not prove that he was guilty of any of these cases (for although hee was the cause of the death of his mother, there was none but she and he that knew it) the Judges before the Proceffe was begunne, ordained that the Testament should be broken, and that *Garcia* should be put into possession of the inheritance, not onely of his mother, but alio of his father; a few dayes after he was intalled in his goods, he enterprised to render his vowes, beginning with our Lady of *Piler* of *Saragoe*, one of the most holy places of *Spaine*,
where

where the blessed Virgin appeared to the Apostle St. James.

We left *Cartagene* at the same time, hee to acquit himself of his vowes towards God, and I of my duty towards my wife. See *Seigneur Fenise* the cause of my voyage which you desired to know, and the weake curiositie of my foolish Cosen, who will be wise hereafter. An example which sheweth us the misfortunes which arrive to those that will make such foolish experiences.

The entertaine of these pleasing divertisements endured untill their last dayes journey. In approaching to *Toledo* *Don Antonio* and his brother renewed their thankfulness to *Fenise*, taking leave of him and *Marcell*, with a thousand civill complements. *Don Charles* carried *Don Antonio* to the towne where *Violante* lived with *Orambel*; who had like to have dyed many times with sorrow, not knowing what was become of her husband, since that hee went for *Naples*, his unexpected presence carryed her from one extremitie to another, the excessive joy which she received at his arrivall, had like to have made her tender her soul in embracing him. *Don Antonio* staid six daies with them, and then he carried them to *Madrid*. *Fenise* and *Marcel* arriving at *Toledo* were received with unspeakable joy, the one of his mother, the other of his wife, the one to stay alwaies with his family, and the other onely to regulate his affaires, and take possession of an estate which his father had left him, with the right of the eldest of his house. The respect which every one bore to his merit, made him happily proceed in his businesse, vvhich being done, the Idea, features, vertues and perfecti-
ons of *Magdelene*, which kept the most eminent
place

place in his memory, obliged him incontinently to take againe the way to *Cartagene*. In few dayes he was with her to the great contentment of her father, mother and brother, who all expected him with great impatience to put him in possession of a treasure which he more passionately aspired unto then the highest fortune in the world. It was his marriage with *Magdelene* which was celebrated before the ministers, of the onely law, where he publicquely gave her his hand, as secretly he had done his heart, & under reciprocall promises of a perfect union, they reaped, the fruites of their loves which had taken encrease and maturitie, amongst so many different dangers, surmounted by their hardy resolutions, and according to the ingenious conduct of our *Heros*.

Having passed some monthes amongst his wives friends, he would let her know his: for this effect by the consentment of their father and mother, and her particular approbation, he carried her to *Madrid* there to establish his house, and habitation; where now he passeth his life, with this marvell of beauty and wisdom, & with all delights which are to be tasted in this world. A successe which may serve for a certaine prooffe, that in case of marriage the union of soules is made in heaven, & the alliance of bodies upon earth. In the varietie of rare adventures described in this volume, the marvellous effects of love, and fortune, are seene, whereby one may know that the one surmounts all the greatest hazards that can oppose him; and the other, although she be inconstant, and many times maglignant, she neverthelesse favoureth generous courages, and aydeth them to accomplish their designs, when they are guided by honour, and vertue.

FINIS.

Courteous Reader, These Books following are Printed for *Humphrey Moseley*, and are to be sold at his Shop at the *Princes Armes* in *St P A U L S* Church-yard.

Various Histories, with curious Discourses in Humane Learning, &c.

1. **T**He History of the *Banished Virgin*, a Romance translated by *I. H. Esq;* Fol.
2. The History of *Polexander*, Englished by *William Brown* Gent. Printed for *T. W.* and are to be sold by *Humphrey Moseley*, in Folio.
3. Mr *James Howels* History of *Lewis* the thirteenth, King of *France*, with the life of his *Cardinall de Richelieu*, in Folio.
4. Mr *Howels* *Epistolae Ho-Eliae*, Familiar Letters, *Domestic* and *Forren*, in six Sections, Partly *Historicall*, *Politick*, *Philosophicall*, first Volume with Additions, in 8^o 1650.
5. Mr *Howels* New Volume of *Familiar Letters*; Partly *Historicall*, *Politick*, *Philosophicall*, the second Volume with many Additions. 1650.
6. Mr *Howels* third Volume of *Additionall Letters* of a fresher date, never before published, in 8^o 1650.
7. Mr *Howels* *Dodona's Grove*, or the *Vocall Forrest*, in 12^o with Additions. 1650.

A

8. M.

Books Printed for *Hampbrey Moseley*.

8. *Mr Howels Englands Teares* for the present Warres, in 12° 1650.

9. *Mr Howell of the Pre-eminence and Pedegree* of Parleмент, in 12° 1650.

10. *Mr Howels Instructions* for Forren Travels, in 12° with divers Additions. 1650.

11. *Mr Howels Vote*, or a Poem Royall presented to His Majesty, in 4°

12. *Mr Howels Anglia Suspiria & Lachrima*, in 12°

13. *Policy Unveiled*, or *Maximes of State*, done into English by the Translator of *Gusman* the Spanish Rogue, in 4°

14. *The History of the Inquisition*, composed by the *R. F. Paul Servita* the compiler of the History of the Councell of Trent, in 4°

15. *Biathanatos*, a Paradox of Self-Homicide, by *D. Io: Donne* Deane of St Pauls London, in 4°

16. *Marques Virgillio Malvezzi's, Romulus and Tarquin*, Englished by *Hen. Earle of Monmouth*, in 12°

17. *Marques Virgillio Malvezzi's*, David persecuted, Englished by *Rob. Ashley Gent.* in 12°

18. *Marques Virgillio Malvezzi*, Of the success and chief events of the Monarchy of Spaine, in the yeare 1639. of the Revolt of the Catalonians, Englished by *Rob. Gentilius*, in 12°

19. *Marques Virgillio Malvezzi's* considerations on the lives of *Alcibiades* and *Coriolanus*, Englished by *Robert Gentilius*, in 12° 1650.

20. Gra-

Books Printed for *Humphrey Mosley.*

20. Gracious Priviledges granted by the King of *Spain* unto our English Merchants, in 4°

21. The History of Life and Death, or the Promulgation of Life, written by *Francis Lord Verulam Viscount St Alban.* in 12°

22. The Antipathy between the *French* and the *Spaniard*, Translated out of Spanish, in 12°

23. Mr *Birds* Grounds of Grammer, in 8°

24. Mr *Bulwers* Philocophus, or the Deafe and Dumb mans friend, in 12°

25. Mr *Bulwers* Pathomyotomia, or a Dissection of the significative Muscles of the Affections of the Mind, in 12°

26. An Itinerary containing a Voyage made through Italy in the yeares 1646, 1647. Illustrated with divers Figures of Antiquities, never before published, by *John Raymond.* Gen. in 12°

27. The use of passions, written by *I. F. Senault*, and put into English by *Henry Earl of Monmouth*, in 8°

28. Choice Musicke for three Voyces, with a Thorough Base, composed by Mr *Henry* and Mr *William Lawes*, Brothers and Servants to His Majesty, with divers Elegies set in Musicke by severall friends upon the Death of Mr *William Lawes*, in 4°

29. Judicious and select Essayes and Observations written by the Renowned & learned Knight, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, with his Apology for his Voyage to *Guiana*, in 8° 1650.

Choice *Poems*, with excellent Translations, and Incomparable Comedies and Tragedies, written by severall Ingenious Authors.

30. **C**omedies and Tragedies written by *Francis Beaumont*, and *John Fletcher* Gent. never printed before, and now published by the Authors Originall Copies, containing 34 Playes, and a Masque, in Folio.

31. *Epigrammata Thomæ Mori* Angli, in 16^o

32. *Fragmenta Aurea*, A collection of the Incomparable Pieces written by Sir *John Suckling* Knight, in 8^o

33. All *Juvenals* 16. Satyrs, Translated by Sir *Robert Stapylton* Knight, wherein is contained a Survey of the manners and Actions of Mankind, with Annotations, in 8^o

34. *Miscus* on the loves of *Hero* & *Leander*, with *Leanders* Letters to *Hero*, and her answer, taken out of *Ovid*, with Annotations, by Sir *Robert Stapylton* Knight, in 12^o

35. Poems &c. written by M. *Edward Waller* of *Beckonsfield* Esq; in 8^o

36. *Pastor fido*, the faithfull Shepheard, a Pastoral, newly Translated out of the Originall by *Richard Fanshawe* Esq; in 4^o

37. Poems, with a Discovery of the Civill Warres of *Rome*, by *Richard Fanshawe* Esq in 4^o

38. *Aurora*

Books Printed for *Humphrey Moseley*.

38. *Aurora Ismenia* and the Prince, with *Oron-*
ta the Cyprian Virgin, translated by *Tho: Stan-*
ley Esq; the second Edition corrected and amen-
ded, in 8° 1650.

39. *Europa*, *Cupid* crucified, *Venus* Vigills, with
Annotations, by *Thomas Stanley* Esq; in 8° 1650.

40. *Medea*, a Tragedie written in Latine by
Lucius Annaeus Seneca, Englisht by Mr *Edward*
Sherburne Esq; with Annotations, in 8°

41. *Senecas* Answer to *Lucilius* his Quære why
Good men suffer misfortunes seeing there is a
Divine Providence, translated into English Verse
by Mr *Edward Sherburne* Esq; in 8°

42. Poems of Mr *Iohn Milton*, with a Masque
presented at *Ludlow* Castle before the Earle of
Bridgewater then President of *Wales*, in 8°

43. Poems &c. with a Masque called the Tri-
umph of Beauty, by *James Shirley*, in 8°

44 Steps to the Temple, Sacred Poems, with
the Delight of the Muses, upon severall occasions,
by *Richard Crashaw* of Cambridge, in 12°

45. The Mistris, or severall Copies of Love
verses written by Mr *Abraham Cowley*, in 8°

46. Divine Poems, written by *Francis Quarles*
Senior, in 8°

47. The Odes of *Casimire*, translated by *George*
Hills, in 12°

48. *Arnalte* and *Lucenda*, or the Melancholy
Knight, a Poem translated by *L. Lawrence* in 4°

49. The Sophister, a Comedy, in 4° by Dr *S.*

50 The

Books printed for *Humphrey Moseley*.

50. The woman Hater, or the Hungry Courtier, a Comedy written by *Francis Beaumont* and *John Fletcher* Gen. in 4°

51. The Tragedy of *Thierry* King of *France*, and his Brother *Theodores*, written by *Francis Beaumont* and *John Fletcher*, Gen. in 4°

52. The Unfortunate Lovers, a Tragedy, written by *William Davenant* Knight, in 4°

53. Love and Honour, a Comedy, written by *William Davenant* Knight, in 4°

54. Madagascar, with other Poems, written by *William Davenant* Knight, in 12°

55. The Country Captain and the Varietie, Two Comedies written by a person of Honour, in 12°

56. The Cid, a Trage-comedy. in 12° 1650.

57. The *Sophy*, a Tragedy, written by *John Denham* Esq;

58. Coopers Hill, a Poem by *John Denham* Esq; the 2 Edition in 4° with Additions. 1650.

59. Clarastella with other occasionall Poems, Elegies, Epigrams, and Satyrs, written by *Robert Heath*, Esq; 1650.

60. The Accademy of Complements, wherein Ladies, Gentlewomen, Schollers, and Strangers, may accommodate their Courtly Practice with Gentile Ceremonies, Complemental, Amorous, high expressions and Formes of speaking, or writing of Letters, most in fashion, with Additions of many witty Poems, and pleasant new Songs, Newly Printed. 1650.

everall Sermons with other Excellent Tracts in Divi-
nity, written by some most eminent and learned
Bishops, and Orthodox Divines.

A Manual of Private Devotions and Medi-
tations for every day in the week, by the
right reverend Father in God, *Lancelot Andrews*,
late Lord Bishop of *Winchester*, in 24°

62 A Mannall of Directions for the Sick, with
many sweet Meditations and Devotions, by the
Right Reverend Father in God *Lancelot Andrews*,
late Lord Bishop of *Winchester*, in 24°

63 Ten Sermons upon Severall Occasions,
preached at *St Pauls Crosse*, and elsewhere, by the
Right Reverend Father in God, *Arthur Lake* late
Bishop of *Bath and Wells*, in 4°

64 Six Sermons upon Severall Occasions
preached at the Court before the Kings Majestie,
and elsewhere, by that late Learned and reverend
Divine, *Iohn Donne* Dr in Divinity, and Deane of
St Pauls London, in 4°

65 Precious Promises and Priviledges of the
faithfull, written by *Richard Sibbes* Doctor in Di-
vinity, late Master of *Katherin Hall* in *Cambridge*,
and Preacher of *Graves Inne London*, in 12°

66 *Sarah* and *Hagar*, or the sixteenth Chapter
of *Genesis*, opened in nineteene Sermons, being the
first legitimate Essay of the Pious labours of that
Learned, Orthodox, and Indetatigable Preacher
of the Gospell, Mr *Iosias Shute* B.D. and above
33 years Rector of *St Mary Woolnoth*, in *Lombard-
street*, in Folio.

66. Christ

Books Printed for *Humphrey Moseley.*

67 Christs tears, with his love and affection towards Jerusalem, delivered in sundry Sermons upon *Luke 19.v.41,42.* by *Richard Maiden* B D Preacher of the Word of God, and late Fellow of *Magdalen Colledge in Cambridge,* 4°

68 Ten Sermons preached upon severall Sundayes, and Saints dayes, by *Peter Hausted* Mr. in Arts, and Curate at *Vppingham in Rusland,* in 4°

69 18 Sermons preached upon the Incarnation and Nativity of our blessed Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ, wherein the greatest mysteries of Godliness are unfolded, to the capacity of the weakest Christian, by *Iohn Dawson,* in 4°

70 Christian Divinity, written by *Edmund Reeve,* Bachelour in Divinity, in 4°

71 A description of the New-borne Christian, or a lively Patterne of the Saint militant, child of God, written by *Nicholas Hunt,* in 4°

72 The Tyranny of Satan, in a Recantation Sermon at *St Pauls Crosse,* by *T. Gage,* in 4°

73 *The True and absolute Bishop,* wherein is shewed how Christ is our only Shepheard, and Bishop of our souls, by *Nicholas Darton,* in 4°

74 Divine Meditations upon the 91 Psalm, and on the Hist. of *Agag K. of Amaleck,* with an Essay of friendship, written by an Hon^{ble} person, in 12°

75 *Lazarus* his rest, a Sermon preached at the Funerall of that pious, learned, & Orthodox Divine, Mr. *Ephraim Vdall,* by *Thomas Reeve* Bachelour in Divinity, in 4°

76. An Historicall Anatomy of Christian Melancholy, by *Edmund Gregory,* in 8°

